

Chapter 701 - Ensnaring Formation

After tossing the Four Elements Root into the pill cauldron, Su Yang immediately began cleaning the impurities within the root before mixing it with the other ingredients.

A few minutes later, the Four Elements Root was completely mixed with the other ingredients.

A few more minutes later, Su Yang said, "You can stop now."

Hearing his words, Zhu Mengyi retrieved her Azure Flames.

However, Su Yang continued to control his alchemy flames for another minute before gradually making the flames smaller until it completely disappeared.

He then removed the lid on the pill cauldron and retrieved the pale green pill from inside.

"What kind of pill is that?" Zhu Mengyi asked him afterward with some sweat on her forehead.

"It's a pill that will strengthen one's immunity towards poison and all toxic substances," Su Yang said.

"Why do you need a pill like that?" Zhu Mengyi raised her eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

"It's a long story, so you should ask them." Su Yang pointed at the Xie Family with his gaze.

He then continued, "Anyway, now that I have the pill, we can enter the Abandoned Forest at any time. I'll give you guys some time to prepare. In the meantime, I'll go check on the Devil Blood Ginseng."

"Do you need one of us to come with you?" Xie Xingfang asked him.

"No, it's fine. I'm just going to harvest the Devil Blood Ginseng before coming right back— it shouldn't take more than half an hour. Once I come back, we can talk about the Abandoned Forest."

Xie Xingfang nodded.

Su Yang left the room shortly later.

"Should I show you the guest rooms?" Xie Xingfang asked Zhu Mengyi and the other two afterward, and they nodded.

Once Su Yang left Snowfall City, he flew directly to the Southern Region, where the bandit hideout was.

However, as he approached the location, he noticed a group of people standing around the exact area he was trying to go, and they appeared to be young disciples from some sect.

Su Yang decided to descend right before these disciples, and when they noticed Su Yang, they quickly said to him, "Stop right there! Don't come any closer!"

Hearing their words, Su Yang looked left and right, almost as though he was looking for something. A few moments later, he returned to looking at the disciples before speaking in a puzzled voice, "If my eyes are not playing tricks on me, we are currently outside, not your house, so who are you to tell me to stay away?"

"Can't you tell by looking at our uniforms?! Are you blind?!" One of the disciples quickly responded with hostility.

"..."

Su Yang looked at their uniforms with a serious expression on his face, even narrowing his eyes. However, he still shook his head a few seconds later, "I have no idea. Who are you guys?"

The disciple immediately fumed, "You can't recognize the Golden Star Formation Sect's uniform?! Have you been living under a rock for most of your life?!"

"Golden Star Formation Sect? Never heard of you idiots." Su Yang said with a nonchalant expression on his face.

"How dare you!"

Right as the disciple took a step towards Su Yang with an aggressive-looking expression on his face, another voice resounded, "What's the commotion about?"

The disciple immediately halted his movements and turned around to bow to the old man that was walking towards them.

"Sect Master Qian!"

The disciples there bowed to him.

The old man known as Sect Master Qian looked at Su Yang with a frown on his face, and he spoke a moment later, "What is your purpose here, young man? Can't you tell that this place has already been occupied by the Golden Star Formation Sect?"

Because the old man is only at the peak of the Earth Spirit Realm, he was unable to sense Su Yang's Heavenly Spirit Realm cultivation base, hence his nonchalant attitude.

"I should be asking you that question— what are a bunch of people from a sect doing in the middle of nowhere? As far as I'm concerned, there is only an empty cave over there," Su Yang said as he pointed to the cave behind them.

"Don't stick your nose where it doesn't belong! And how dare you address the Sect Master so casually?! Do you know who you are talking to?!" The disciple immediately shouted at him.

The old man, however, remained calm, "My disciple is right. You shouldn't stick your nose where it doesn't belong. This is the Golden Star Formation Sect's business. I don't know who you are or which sect you belong to, but you should leave before I find out, or..."

"Or what?" Su Yang stood there with a casual smile on his face, seemingly unwilling to leave. "What are you going to do?"

Seeing this, the old man shook his head and sighed, "Young people these days have no respect for their elders."

"Very well, since you insist on staying here, I'll help you." The old man suddenly waved his sleeves, and a few seconds later, a small semi-transparent barrier in the shape of a box appeared around Su Yang, trapping him inside.

"This is..." Su Yang looked at the tiny and thin formation that surrounded him with a speechless expression on his face.

"Hahaha! You've screwed yourself now! That is the Ensnaring Formation! You are now trapped inside, and unless Sect Master Qian assists, you will not be able to leave!" The disciples there began laughing loudly after seeing Su Yang's situation.

"Don't worry, young man. I won't kill you. However, for disobeying your elders, I will have to punish you a little. Therefore, I will keep you trapped inside the formation until you repent your mistakes," said Sect Master Qian.

"Anyway, I am going to return to working on the profound formation in the cave." Sect Master Qian then turned around and began walking back to the cave.

"Hahahaha!" However, Su Yang's sudden laughter immediately stopped the old man in his tracks.

Chapter 702 - Devil Blood Ginseng

"What's so funny, young man? Have you already gone crazy? It hasn't even been a minute since you have been trapped." Sect Master Qian said to him with raised eyebrows, puzzled by Su Yang's reaction.

After laughing for a good moment, Su Yang wiped the tears in his eyes before speaking, "So you can see the formation in the cave, huh? You are not half bad, I'll give you at least that."

"You also know about the formation?" Sect Master Qian quickly frowned.

The formation in the cave was profoundly powerful— so powerful that only he was able to see it and nobody else, and not even his friends that were top Formation experts in this world could see it. In fact, he'd only found it by chance.

"Yes, I do, and judging from your words just now, I can assume that you're trying to crack the formation. However, I have some unfortunate news for you. One, you will not be able to crack that formation even if you tried for however long you have left in your life. Two, you won't be able to crack the formation even if every Formation expert in this world were to work together for a thousand years. And finally, if you think you can trap me inside this pathetic formation, you are in way over your head."

"You... Just who are you?" Sect Master Qian looked at him with wide eyes filled with shock.

"You shouldn't stick your nose where it doesn't belong or you might get hurt." Su Yang casually lifted his right hand and gently poked the Ensnaring Formation with his index fingers.

A second later, the entire Ensnaring Formation cracked like a mirror before exploding into countless tiny fragments, shocking everybody there, especially Sect Master Qian, who was very confident of his formation.

"I-Impossible! Even though I didn't put too much power into creating the formation, it's not something a mere Junior can shatter so easily!" Sect Master Qian took a step back from shock, his gaze filled with disbelief.

After destroying the formation, Su Yang looked at the old man and said, "Let me show you what a real Ensnaring Formation looks like!"

Su Yang snapped his fingers at the end of his sentence, and many formations suddenly appeared around Sect Master Qian and the other disciples there.

Each of these formations had walls that were as thick as an a.d.u.l.t's biceps, and there was enough room inside these formations for one to sleep in.

"T-This is!" Sect Master Qian and his disciples looked at the formation that surrounded them with a shocked look on their faces.

However, when they realized the power of these formations, they couldn't help but unconsciously admire the formations despite being trapped inside them.

"Wait a second... This formation... It's very familiar to the one in the cave! Don't tell me you are the one who created it?! Why?! For what purpose did you create such a powerful formation there? What are you hiding?! Who are you?!" Sect Master Qian immediately began bombarding Su Yang with questions after realizing the truth.

However, Su Yang merely shook his head and ignored the old man. He then approached the cave and went inside after removing the formation with ease.

Once he was inside the bandits' hideout, Su Yang immediately noticed that the blood that was supposed to cover the floor had magically disappeared, almost like someone had entered this place and cleaned it.

However, Su Yang knew very well that this was impossible, as his formation remained untouched, so this phenomenon could only be related to the Devil Blood Ginseng.

Su Yang then walked to where the Devil Blood Ginseng was growing last time, and just as he'd expected, the Devil Blood Ginseng was fully blooming and ready to be harvested.

After carefully plucking the Devil Blood Ginseng, Su Yang placed it inside a preservation box he'd prepared beforehand and closed it, keeping the Devil Blood Ginseng fresh for essentially forever until the box is opened again.

Once he'd obtained the Devil Blood Ginseng, Su Yang returned outside, where the people from the Golden Star Formation Sect were still trapped inside his formation.

"Hey! Let me out of here! Do you know who I am?!" Sect Master Qian shouted at Su Yang after seeing him return.

"I am Qian Liren, the number one Formation expert in the Eastern Continent! I have close relationsh.i.p.s with the Xie Family and even Lord Xie himself!"

Su Yang walked to stand in front of him and spoke in a mocking voice, "You are the number one Formation expert in the Eastern Continent? How laughable."

"I am telling the truth! I have personally assisted with the creation of many defensive formations around the Eastern Continent!" Qian Liren said.

Su Yang shook his head and said, "I don't doubt that you're the number one Formation expert in the Eastern Continent as you were able to see my formation. Even though it was created last year when I just entered the Heavenly Spirit Realm, it's still an achievement that you should be proud of. Therefore, I

won't kill you. Instead, I'll just keep you trapped inside the formation for an entire month, as that's when the formation will deactivate by itself."

"An entire month?! That's crazy! You can't do that to me!" Qian Liren said with a terrified expression on his face.

"As an expert at the peak of the Earth Spirit Realm, you can live an entire year without food or water with relative ease, so you'll be fine. As for your disciples that are only at the Profound Spirit Realm... Well, they'll manage. While they won't die, they'll definitely suffer a little. Anyways, I am a busy man with places to be so I'll leave now."

After ending his sentence, Su Yang retrieved the wooden flying boat and jumped onto it before speeding away, ignoring the loud screams coming from behind him.

A few minutes later, he returned to Snowfall City with the Devil Blood Ginseng in hand.

Chapter 703 - Abandoned Forest

"Welcome back, Su Yang. How was the harvest? Did you manage to obtain the Devil Blood Ginseng?" Xie Xingfang asked after his return.

"Yes, the Devil Blood Ginseng is in here." Su Yang showed her the preservation box without opening it.

"Now we just need the Purple Qilin's blood, huh..." Lord Xie mumbled with a serious expression on his face.

"I can go to the Abandoned Forest right now if you can't wait," Su Yang said to him.

"I am coming with you, Su Yang!" Xie Xingfang suddenly said.

"Although I appreciate your offer, I think it would be for the best if you stay here with everyone else," Su Yang said to her.

"Su Yang is right, Xing'er. You are only at the first level Heavenly Spirit Realm. It's too dangerous for you to wander in the Abandoned Forest even with Su Yang there. And while he may be able to protect himself, we cannot say the same for you," Lord Xie chimed in.

"Just let Su Yang do his thing, Xing'er. He'll be fine," Xie Wang also said.

"But I... I don't want to feel useless..." Xie Xingfang sighed, as Su Yang has been doing everything for her recently. "And since I have the ability to enter the Abandoned Forest, I want to be there with you, Su Yang!"

"Hmm..." Su Yang slightly narrowed his eyes, and he spoke after a moment of silence, "Well, it doesn't really hurt to have you with me since I am confident that I would be able to protect you no matter the circumstances. It's just that I'd prefer it if you stayed clear from the dangerous environment in general."

"I am also a Cultivator, Su Yang! A little danger won't stop me, or I am not qualified to be a Cultivator!" Xie Xingfang said with a resolute expression on her face. However, there appeared to be a deeper meaning behind her words, and even Su Yang was barely able to pick up on this hint.

"Well said," Su Yang nodded, and he said, "Can one even be considered a Cultivator if they distance themselves from even the slightest danger for the rest of their life?"

"Since you want to come with me to the Abandoned Forest, I won't say anything else."

Xie Xingfang nodded.

"Haaa... I knew you wouldn't be able to sit still..." Lord Xie sighed, and he retrieved a storage ring before handing it to Xie Xingfang.

"There are a few life-saving treasures inside. Do not hesitate to use them if you are in trouble."

"Thank you, father..." Xie Xingfang accepted the storage ring.

Sometime later, Xie Wang said Su Yang as he prepared to leave with Xie Xingfang.

"The Abandoned Forest consists of three layers, resembling Sects with an outer area, inner area, and the center. The Abandoned Forest is also extremely large with hundreds of millions of acres of land, and the majority of the land is unexplored, especially the inner and center, hence why I have no map for you."

"Furthermore, while the Purple Qilin can be found throughout the Abandoned Forest, it's nest should be within the center of the Abandoned Forest. If you find its nest but not the Purple Qilin itself, don't worry, as it will return at least once a week."

"I shouldn't have to say this, but you must be careful. I am well aware that you used to be an Immortal in your previous life with immense experience, and you may be one of the strongest individuals in this world right now, but you cannot underestimate the Abandoned Forest, and a single mistake will cost you your life."

"I will keep that in mind," Su Yang nodded his head as he jumped onto the flying boat, and Xie Xingfang followed him.

"I am serious, Su Yang! Don't underestimate the Abandoned Forest!"

"Which direction is the Abandoned Forest?" Su Yang asked Xie Xingfang a moment later.

"Towards the east," she replied.

Su Yang nodded before controlling the flying ship to fly towards the east.

Once Su Yang left, Wu Jingjing asked Xie Wang, "I understand the situation after Xie Xingfang told us about her condition but she didn't mention this Abandoned Forest. What kind of place is it? And how dangerous is it really?"

Hearing her question, Xie Wang sighed before speaking, "The Abandoned Forest is one of the most dangerous places in this world with a toxic environment that forces even Cultivators at my level away. It is so dangerous that we have only managed to explore some of the outer areas after a thousand years with anything beyond that barely touched. And while some people have managed to make it to the center area, most of them never came back."

"As for those who were fortunate enough to return alive, they could only recall the things they have experienced there, as making a map for the place was seemingly impossible."

"The place is that dangerous...?" Zhu Mengyi said with a slight frown on her face.

"It may be dangerous, but there's no need to worry about Su Yang. I'm sure he'll stroll through the place like it's his own home or something," Wu Jingjing said with a calm expression on her face.

Meanwhile, a few hundred thousand miles away, Su Yang suddenly stopped the flying ship.

"So this is the Abandoned Forest, huh? No wonder why your grandfather kept on warning me— this place is indeed quite the dangerous place," Su Yang said as he gazed at the boundless forest a few miles in the distance that was also covered in this thick purple mist.

"Despite being immune to the poison mist, my body still trembles before it. The Abandoned Forest... Why does it even exist?" Xie Xingfang sighed.

Su Yang smiled and said, "This is Heaven's way of assisting us, Cultivators. Although it may be extremely dangerous, it is also extremely rewarding for those who dare to challenge it."

"If being a Cultivator was easy, the strong wouldn't be revered as much, and one wouldn't demand respect. Most peak experts in my world are peak experts because they managed to survive the most dangerous situations compared to the rest."

"I see..." Xie Xingfang nodded, finding what he said very logical.

Chapter 704 - Abandoned Forest (2)

"Anyway, let's try to look for the Purple Qilin from up here where the poison can't reach us," Su Yang said.

"The poison mist may not affect us from up here for now, but once we reach the inner area, the poison mist will also be in the sky, and we won't be able to see anything from up here. Furthermore, the poison mist also blocks our spiritual sense, so we won't be able to look around with our Divine Sense," Xie Xingfang explained to him.

"That's fine. Let's just see what we can find from the outer areas." Su Yang nodded his head as the small wooden boat began traveling over the outer area of the Abandoned Forest.

As they spent an hour looking around the outer area, Su Yang noticed that there was a surprisingly high number of people exploring the Abandoned Forest.

"As one would expect from Cultivators— no matter how dangerous the place is, there will always be a Cultivator willing to explore it in hopes for a fortunate encounter." Su Yang spoke with a smile on his face.

"The poison mist in the outer area of the Abandoned Forest is somewhat endurable with the assistance of some medicine and treasures, but it is still very dangerous for the majority of Cultivators. In fact, the mortality rate just from the outer areas is extremely high at over 70%. The inner areas have a 90% mortality rate, whilst 99% of people who enter the center area will never come back." Xie Xingfang said.

And she continued a moment later, "Su Yang, compared to the most dangerous places in your world, how dangerous is the Abandoned Forest?"

"Hahaha..." Su Yang laughed at her question before speaking, "The Abandoned Forest is like a stroll in the park compared to some of the most dangerous places in the Divine Heavens. Although this place is indeed quite dangerous for the majority, as long as you prepare yourself properly, the Abandoned Forest isn't an issue at all."

"In the Divine Heavens, however, there are places that will remain dangerous no matter how much you prepare for it, and there are even places where your Cultivation cannot be used. For example, it's like trying to enter the Abandoned Forest while fully n.a.k.e.d, or swimming in the Jade Sea without any cultivation."

"Unable to use your cultivation?" Xie Xingfang covered her mouth from shock, as she cannot imagine doing either of what he'd just said.

"Anyway, the Abandoned Forest may be dangerous even for me if not for the poison immunity pill, but as I'd said, as long as you're prepared, this place isn't all that bad," Su Yang said, and they continued to fly around the outer areas.

A few hours later, once they have pretty much circled around the Abandoned Forest multiple times without seeing the Purple Qilin, Su Yang said, "Let's head to the inner areas now."

"Okay," Xie Xingfang nodded.

A few minutes later, Su Yang stopped the flying boat right before the poison mist that filled the air.

"What do you think, Su Yang? Will the poison immunity pill work?" Xie Xingfang asked him.

"Yes," he nodded before he continued, "However, I'd hoped to save the pill until we reached the center area, but this poison is much stronger than I'd anticipated, so I will have to consume it now."

"How long will the pill last?" Xie Xingfang then asked him.

"It mostly depends on the strength of the poison I am facing with it lasting 7 days usually. In this case, this poison is quite potent, so the pill will only last me four days before its effects go away. However, if the poison is already this powerful in the inner area, I can only imagine how much stronger the poison will be near the center. If we're lucky, I will have at most 24 hours before the pill becomes useless."

"24 hours... If we cannot find the Purple Qilin and obtain its blood before then, we'll retreat for the time being..." Xie Xingfang sighed.

A moment later, Su Yang retrieved the pill and tossed it into his mouth.

After swallowing it, he said, "Let's go."

Su Yang immediately controlled the flying boat to enter the poison mist. However, because of the density of the poison mist, they were unable to see anything while on the flying boat, forcing them to descend and travel on foot.

Once they were near ground level, they began flying around, as it was much faster than running with their legs, not to mention the puddles of toxic substances laying everywhere.

After traveling for a few minutes, they encountered their first spiritual beast— an enormous lizard with purple pointy scales and with a cultivation at the peak of the True Spirit Realm.

"That's a Bane Lizard! Even though it's only at the True Spirit Realm, its saliva is highly toxic and can instantly kill even a Cultivator at the Heavenly Spirit Realm!" Xie Xingfang warned him.

And right as the Bane Lizard noticed their presence, Su Yang swung his arm as though it was a sword.

Whoosh!

An arc of light created by Sword Qi flew at the Bane Lizard, separating its body into two pieces and killing it before it could even react.

'What was that? It resembled Sword Intent, but it felt nothing like it and it's so much more powerful!' Xie Xingfang cried inwardly after witnessing Sword Qi for the first time.

After killing the Bane Lizard, they continued to fly towards the center of the Abandoned Forest, encountering a spiritual beast every few minutes.

However, Su Yang would take care of these spiritual beasts with ease before they could even react, much less retaliate.

And as they got closer to the center of the Abandoned Forest, the spiritual beasts also grew stronger. But alas, before Su Yang's powerful Sword Qi, it didn't matter how strong they were, as they would inevitably be slain by him in a single strike.

As for Xie Xingfang, she closely followed Su Yang, silently admiring his domineering figure from behind, her gaze filled with wonder.

Chapter 705 - Abandoned Forest (3)

After traveling for half a day, Su Yang stopped advancing once they reached a small lake that appeared to be profoundly deep with a bottom.

"Is there something wrong with this place?" Xie Xingfang asked him when he suddenly stopped moving.

"No, but I'll be right back. Give me like 5 minutes. If something goes wrong while I am gone, immediately use your life-saving treasures and get out of the Abandoned Forest."

After saying that, Su Yang dived into this mysterious lake without any explanation, greatly shocking Xie Xingfang.

"Su Yang?!" Xie Xingfang cried out loud, but alas, Su Yang was already too deep in the lake to hear her.

Thus, Xie Xingfang began to look around with alertness, and she quickly realized that without Su Yang by her side, the Abandoned Forest immediately appeared countless times more dangerous and terrifying, and even the slightest noise would cause her heart to skip a beat.

Furthermore, a single minute without Su Yang by her side felt like an entire hour, and the second minute felt even longer, whilst the 3rd minute felt like an eternity.

Five very, very long minutes later, Su Yang resurfaced from the lake and returned to her side.

"Su Yang!" Xie Xingfang sighed in relief after seeing his face again, feeling like a lost child who reunited with her parents.

"What were you doing in the lake?" she then asked him.

"I'm sorry for leaving you alone so suddenly and without an explanation since I wanted this to be a surprise..." Su Yang showed her the thing he retrieved from the floor of the lake; it was a beautiful flower with azure-colored petals and a glowing stem.

"This... Could this be...?" Xie Xingfang covered her mouth from shock.

"Yes, it's the Flower of Luminosity— it's a rare treasure that can boost one's constitution, and it will assist your cultivation and body greatly after we cure your current condition." Su Yang said as he extended it to her.

"Y-You're giving this to me? Are you sure? This is a priceless treasure that has appeared only once eight hundred years ago and has never shown up again until now..." Xie Xingfang hesitated to accept it.

"It may be rare but I have no use for it, and since it can improve one's constitution, it'll benefit you the most," Su Yang said, and then he continued, "And once I return to the Divine Heavens, there will be plenty of treasure that will make this Flower of Luminosity look like nothing."

"Divine Heavens..." Xie Xingfang mumbled in a low voice before accepting the Flower of Luminosity a moment later.

"Thank you, Su Yang..." Xie Xingfang said to him afterward.

"Don't even mention it," Su Yang smiled.

"Anyway, let's continue heading towards the center. Since my pill will only last me for so long, it would be for the best if we tried our luck at the Purple Qilin's nest," he continued before he started moving again.

Xie Xingfang nodded, and she closely followed him again.

Nearly an entire day later, they stopped again.

"We've finally arrived at the center, Su Yang," Xie Xingfang suddenly said to him.

Before them, unexpectedly, there appeared to be no poison mist, almost as though it'd suddenly disappeared. However, if they were to look up into the sky, the poison mist still existed, and it appeared to be even thicker than the poison mist in the inner area.

"Although it doesn't seem like the poison mist is there, that's actually not true. For some reason, the poison mist is transparent in the center of the Abandoned Forest, and this has tricked many people, causing many deaths before people finally realized the real situation," Xie Xingfang explained to him.

"That's because the poison mist in the center is completely different from the poison mist in the outer and inner areas, and it's at least ten times more potent," Su Yang said after a brief examination of the clear poison mist with his smell.

"10 times...? Then how much time do you think your pill will last?" Xie Xingfang asked him.

"Since half of the pill's power is already gone from the inner area, I'm afraid that I have at most 10 hours before I have to leave. Though, I can extend it by around 2 hours if I cultivate and focus on defending myself from the poison mist."

"Twelve hours, huh? Then let's hope the Purple Qilin is already in its nest by the time we arrive," Xie Xingfang sighed.

Su Yang nodded, and once they stepped into the center of the Abandoned Forest and the transparent poison mist, they quickly began looking for the Purple Qilin's nest, as every minute counted from this point forth.

"Watch out, Su Yang!" Xie Xingfang suddenly warned him when she noticed something small flying towards his face.

Su Yang glanced at the needle-like object with a calm expression, and his body exploded with Sword Qi when the needle was a millimeter from touching his skin.

After destroying the needle until nothing was left, Su Yang flicked his arm, sending his Sword Qi flying into the distance.

Boom!

The ground shook violently a second later before quickly calming down again.

"W-What was that?" Xie Xingfang asked him afterward.

"No idea, but it was at the third level Heavenly Spirit Realm, and that needle contained some very powerful poison— enough to kill even a Sovereign Spirit Realm Cultivator within seconds," Su Yang shrugged.

"Even a Sovereign Spirit Realm Cultivator cannot last a minute against the poison?" Xie Xingfang took a deep breath after hearing his words.

"By the way, I have been wondering for a while now, but what kind of techniques have you been using? It feels like Sword Intent yet it's not." Xie Xingfang then asked him.

"Oh, it's Sword Qi, and it's one level above Sword Intent," he calmly responded.

"Sword Qi...?" Xie Xingfang looked at him with a dazed face, as this is her first time hearing such a term.

Chapter 706 - Purple Qilin's Nest

After a brief break, Su Yang and Xie Xingfang continued to look around the Abandoned Forest for the Purple Qilin's nest. However, since they were unable to use their spiritual sense, they were forced to wander around aimlessly hoping they'd be fortunate enough to encounter it.

"Purple Qilin... They normally live where the toxicity is the strongest, so as long as we can pinpoint the location with the strongest poison mist, we should be able to find its nest," Su Yang said.

"But how are we going to do that? Is there a way for us to tell which area contains more poison mists?" Xie Xingfang asked.

"There is..." Su Yang closed his eyes and took a deep breath.

He then opened his eyes and turned to look in a certain direction before speaking, "The poison mist coming from that direction is slightly more intense than the other directions. If we follow that direction, we should reach the Purple Qilin's nest sooner or later."

Xie Xingfang nodded, and they began following the trail.

As they approached the location with the deadliest poison mist, their encounters with magical beasts also increased.

Whoosh! Whoosh! Whoosh!

Boom! Boom! Boom!

The earth shook violently for a moment every time Su Yang used his Sword Qi to instantly slay any magical beasts that dared to threaten him or Xie Xingfang.

After spending an hour following the trail without any breaks, Su Yang and Xie Xingfang finally stopped in front of a massive boulder that had its center caved in, looking like someone had punched the center of a ball of dough, and there were even large leaves neatly placed inside the rock, resembling a nest for some large beast.

"This looks like a nest? And that thing in the middle..." Xie Xingfang's eyes widened when she noticed the round and large object sitting in the middle of this nest.

"It's an egg, and judging from its size and shape, it should belong to the Purple Qilin," Su Yang said a moment later.

"A Purple Qilin egg! This is massive, Su Yang! If we can obtain this egg and train the baby Purple Qilin, it could potentially become one of the strongest Guardian Spirit in the Eastern Continent!" Xie Xingfang said to him.

"While that may be the case, it's also extremely hard to train a Purple Qilin even if you start right after its birth, as they are naturally aggressive towards others," Su Yang said to her.

"Even if that's the case, we can't just leave such a priceless treasure here. Because Purple Qilins can only be found in the Abandoned Forest, not many people have seen them before. It'll be an incredible event if one was brought back to the outside world." Xie Xingfang said.

Su Yang nodded, "Since we're already here and the egg exists, there's no reason why we should leave it here. Though we still need to deal with the Purple Qilin first, or it might go on a rampage if it realizes that its child had been taken from her, which could endanger the outside world."

Xie Xingfang then said, "Speaking of the Purple Qilin, I don't see it anywhere... Let's hope it'll return within the next few hours before your pill loses effect."

"Since it has a baby, the Purple Qilin will be returning more often than normal to check up on the baby, so there's a high chance that it might return within the next few hours. I still have around 7 hours— 9 hours if I start cultivating now."

Xie Xingfang nodded and said, "I'll keep watch for you so you can focus on cultivating. If the Purple Qilin doesn't show up in 8 hours, we're leaving."

"If the Purple Qilin is the lord of this place, we shouldn't have to worry about other creatures approaching this place," Su Yang said as he took a seat beside the nest.

Once Su Yang closed his eyes and began his cultivation, Xie Xingfang approached Su Yang and stood right beside him, and she began looking out for any signs of danger.

Ten minutes... thirty minutes... one hour... two hours... three hours...

Three hours passed by in the blink of an eye for Xie Xingfang whilst she was focused entirely on defending Su Yang, yet there were still no signs of the Purple Qilin returning.

After another hour of waiting, it suddenly started raining, and this rain was obviously abnormal and was extremely toxic.

"Su Yang, are you okay? This rain seems to be even deadlier than the poison mist..." she asked him in a worried voice.

Su Yang stopped cultivating and said, "I am okay, but this rain will further weaken the effects of my pill, shortening it by another two hours, so I have around four hours left— or three hours."

"Three hours..." Xie Xingfang mumbled with a frown on her face, but alas, there was nothing she could do to help Su Yang in this situation— unless she could somehow give Su Yang her Heavenly Constitution the Thousand Poisons Body.

'If I could give Su Yang my Heavenly Constitution...?' A thought suddenly appeared in Xie Xingfang's head, and she slowly turned to look at Su Yang with the corner of her eyes.

'If I recall correctly, the reason the Moonlight Blades wanted me was because of my Heavenly Constitution, as whoever I give my first time to will also obtain my Heavenly Constitution...'

'Su Yang... even though I dislike the fact that he has so many partners, I cannot disregard everything that he's done for me, nor can I disregard my feelings for him...'

'Su Yang... he will leave this world in two years and return to his own world... The chance of us meeting again is incredibly slim to none...'

'Su Yang... even though he has many partners, he treats them all equally, and none of his current partners seem dissatisfied with their situation or neglected by him...'

After silently pondering to herself for an entire hour, Xie Xingfang took a deep breath before looking at Su Yang with a resolute feeling in her gaze, looking like she'd finally come to a conclusion.

Chapter 707 - Xie Xingfang's Resolution

After pondering deeply for an entire hour, Xie Xingfang finally came to a conclusion, and she turned to look at Su Yang before opening her mouth to speak, "S-Su Yang..."

Her voice was shaky and filled with nervousness as she called his name, and her heart was beating like crazy, feeling like it was on the verge of bursting into flames.

"What's the matter?" Su Yang turned to look at her with a calm gaze.

"..."

Xie Xingfang's body trembled after meeting his gaze, and her body uncontrollably froze for a moment.

Seeing her weird movements, Su Yang raised one of his eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

After a moment of awkward silence, Xie Xingfang closed her eyes and opened it again. She then began moving again until she was standing right in front of Su Yang, who was still sitting in the lotus position.

Taking a deep breath and releasing it, Xie Xingfang suddenly squatted forward until she was sitting on Su Yang's lap.

"Xing'er...?" Su Yang looked at her with wide eyes, clearly surprised by her actions.

Xie Xingfang did not immediately respond and instead wrapped her arms around his neck before speaking in a bashful voice, "Su Yang... you said that you are willing to listen to me whenever, right?"

Once Su Yang nodded his head, Xie Xingfang continued, "Then I want you to listen to me."

"I... Xie Xingfang... is madly in love with you, Su Yang. I know that you already have many partners, and I want to keep you for myself, hence why I have been hesitating on telling you, but I know that it is impossible to take you from the others and keep you for myself. Over the last few weeks, I have been contemplating whether or not I should tell you, and I have finally come to a conclusion. Su Yang... I want to be with you no matter how many women you have in your life. Even if I am not your favorite, even if you get bored of me, I still want to be by your side, as I cannot imagine living a life without you anymore..."

Tears began to flow from her eyes, and she felt as though a massive mountain had just been lifted from her shoulders after her confession.

However, she was not finished, and she continued to speak with tears dripping from her beautiful face, "I know I am being selfish by doing this... and I am well aware that you might not even like me, but I still want you to accept me— at least for today."

And before Su Yang could even respond, Xie Xingfang began loosening the top of her robes, revealing her beautiful and flawless b.r.e.a.s.ts to Su Yang.

After showing Su Yang her snow-white b.r.e.a.s.ts, Xie Xingfang wrapped her slender arms around his head and pulled him into her chest, gently pressing her soft b.r.e.a.s.ts against his cheeks.

"Can you hear it, Su Yang? My heart... it feels like it's going to burst out of my chest at any minute now, and I have never felt so excited and scared at the same time before..." Xie Xingfang mumbled in a low voice.

"..."

Su Yang intensively stared at the pink tip that was fully erect on Xie Xingfang's b.r.e.a.s.t, as it was right before his face.

A moment later, without saying any words, Su Yang moved his head forward and opened his mouth before kissing Xie Xingfang's b.r.e.a.s.ts and sucking on her soft n.i.p.p.l.es.

"Aaah~!" Xie Xingfang m.o.a.n.ed in a surprised voice, feeling an unfamiliar sensation suddenly coursing through her body, yet she did not push Su Yang away. In fact, she tightened her embrace on him.

Su Yang also embraced Xie Xingfang's body, and he would continue to suck on her b.r.e.a.s.ts for the next minute with Xie Xingfang sitting on his lap.

"Mmm~!"

Xie Xingfang could feel Su Yang gentling nibbling on her hard tips, forcing her to m.o.a.n softly.

A few minutes later, Su Yang removed his mouth from Xie Xingfang's b.r.e.a.s.ts and looked at her flushed and excited face.

"Thank you, Xing'er, for telling me your feelings. I know it was difficult, and I know you are still doubting yourself, but as I'd promised, I will help you remove those shackles of doubt so that you can express yourself freely."

After saying those words, Su Yang placed his hand on the back of Xie Xingfang's head before pulling her into his face and kissing her soft and luscious lips.

Xie Xingfang did not reject his kiss and closed her eyes to focus on his lips.

After kissing for a few minutes, their heads separated from each other for a brief moment to breathe and look at each other in the eyes with a passionate gaze before their lips connected again, kissing even more passionately than before.

They continued in this manner for many minutes, nearly an hour, until they were satisfied.

"I never thought I would be doing this kind of thing within one of the most dangerous places in this world— the Abandoned Forest, no less..." Xie Xingfang spoke in an exhausted voice, sounding like she was out of breath from kissing too much.

"This is what makes life exciting— there are things in life you simply cannot expect or control no matter what you do," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

Xie Xingfang nodded, and then she continued with a blush on her face, "Umm... What should we do now?"

Su Yang looked at their surroundings for a moment before speaking, "Since this isn't exactly a suitable place for cultivation, let's go up."

He then retrieved the flying boat and jumped onto it with Xie Xingfang still in his embrace.

They then flew straight upwards until they were surrounded by clouds in all four directions.

'W-We're going to do it here?' Xie Xingfang said inwardly with a dazed face. Won't this make her an exhibitionist?

Despite that, a small smile still appeared on her beautiful face, as she was simply too excited to finally cultivate with Su Yang to care about the minor things such as their location.

Chapter 708 - Penetrating Xie Xingfang

"Let me make this a little bit more comfortable for us," Su Yang said to Xie Xingfang once they were inside the clouds, and he retrieved a small but comfortable mattress before placing it on top of the flying boat.

"Do you always carry a mattress around with you?" Xie Xingfang looked at him with admiration in her gaze, feeling slightly baffled by his commitment and dedication.

"Of course. You never know when you'll need it with today as an example," Su Yang said with a smile as he laid her body on the mattress.

"Su Yang... I don't think I have the strength to remove my clothes... can you help me?" Xie Xingfang asked him with her face still blushing.

"With pleasure..."

Su Yang loosened her robes and spread them over the mattress like a blanket.

"What do you think...?" Xie Xingfang asked him afterward with her face flushed with redness and her legs closed from embarrassment.

"It's beautiful," Su Yang said as his gaze gently looked at Xie Xingfang's perfectly slim body and flawless snow-white skin that resembled white jade, feeling as though he was looking at a graceful fairy who belonged to a masterpiece painting.

His hands then gently caressed her body from between her b.r.e.a.s.ts until it reached her clean and hairless cave.

"Let me please you for a bit," Su Yang then kneeled on the mattress and lifted Xie Xingfang's body and pulled her closer to his body before placing her soft thighs on his shoulders and her cave directly in front of his mouth.

"T-This is..." Xie Xingfang's heart palpitated loudly and crazily, feeling as though there was a war drum being played in her heart.

Once she was in position, Su Yang used his fingers to spread open the small slit between her legs, revealing the pretty and cute pink meat inside, and without further ado, he immediately began teasing it with his tongue.

"Aaaah~!"

Xie Xingfang's body immediately tightened up with her legs tightly wrapped behind Su Yang's body.

However, a few moments later, once her body began familiarizing itself with the feeling, her body naturally relaxed.

"Mmm~"

"Aaaahn~!"

"Aaaahhh~!"

Xie Xingfang m.o.a.ned softly as Su Yang licked and kissed her little sister for many minutes, and her body would constantly tremble in delight, even releasing these milky substances in small but constant amounts.

After spending many minutes tasting Xie Xingfang's pink meat and savoring her rich and milky Yin Qi, Su Yang laid her body back on the mattress before he began removing his clothes.

'This is a man— Su Yang's...' Xie Xingfang intensely stared at Su Yang's raging dragon that was thick, long, and rock hard.

Seeing Xie Xingfang's enchanted expression, Su Yang stood up and said to her, "Go ahead, it won't bite."

Xie Xingfang nodded and kneeled before his rod. Once it was directly before her curious face, she gently grabbed it as though it was a fragile treasure, and she began licking the tip with her wet and small tongue, tasting the sweet and sticky substance that was oozing out from the hole.

'It's so stiff and hot... it looks painful...' Xie Xingfang thought to herself as she slowly savored his rod.

A few minutes later, Xie Xingfang opened her small mouth and tried to put the entire rod into her mouth, but alas, she was only able to manage to fit half of it inside her mouth, and she began to stroke her head in a graceful manner.

Because she was afraid of hurting Su Yang, Xie Xingfang made sure her every movement was made with consideration whilst trying her best to please him despite her lack of experience and knowledge.

"Do you want to taste my Yang Qi?" Su Yang asked her.

Xie Xingfang looked at him from below and gently nodded her head with his rod still in his mouth, looking very seducing and s.e.xy.

A few moments later, Su Yang slowly released his Yang Qi so that he doesn't overwhelm Xie Xingfang, who was much more delicate than his other partners.

'What an indescribable but pleasant taste...' Xie Xingfang closed her eyes and savored the Yang Qi that was being fed to her through Su Yang's straw.

After swallowing a mouthful of Yang Qi in small quantities, Xie Xingfang finally removed her mouth from his rod, allowing it to feel the cool breeze once again.

"Both of our bodies are ready— are you?" Su Yang asked her afterward.

"I am." Xie Xingfang nodded, and she continued, "Please make love with me, Su Yang..."

Hearing Xie Xingfang's yearning voice, Su Yang kneeled on the mattress again before pulling her towards his body— until his thick rod was poking the sealed entrance between her legs.

"It's going to be painful at first because your hole is smaller than normal. However, if you want, I can help you relieve that pain with a special technique," Su Yang suddenly said to her.

"No, it's okay. I want to experience this as intended. Even if it's painful, I want to experience it, so that I won't mistake this as a dream..."

"Okay," Su Yang nodded.

A few seconds later, he began pushing his wet rod into her small and slippery entrance.

'It hurts!' Xie Xingfang cried inwardly as she tightly clenched her jaws together to try and ease the intense pain coming from between her legs, and fresh blood was already flowing from her cave after accepting just the tip of Su Yang's sword.

'What a tight hole!' Su Yang thought to himself as tore her inner walls apart, feeling a crushing sensation around his meatstick. Although he could use the Myriad Transformation to adjust his sword to fit into Xie Xingfang's hole better, that would be disrespectful to Xie Xingfang, who wanted to accept him as who he is.

A few moments later, Su Yang finally stopped, as he'd reached the end of her small and narrow cave. However, Su Yang was unable to fit his entire shaft into Xie Xingfang's body, as there was about an inch of free space left.

Chapter 709 - A Serious Proposal

"Are you okay?" Su Yang asked Xie Xingfang after his rod reached the end of her hole.

"Is it... all inside?" Xie Xingfang asked in return.

"I fit all I could inside," Su Yang nodded.

"Go ahead, Su Yang. Use my body to please yourself. I can endure it," she then said to him.

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "That isn't right. I am not doing this just so I can relieve myself. I am doing this because I want you to feel good, not the other way around. Furthermore, this is more than just about pleasure. This is the beginning of our love— our relationship."

Hearing his words, Xie Xingfang's teary eyes actually began tearing up. "Thank you, Su Yang... for accepting me... I really, really love you..."

Su Yang bent over to kiss Xie Xingfang on the lips. After removing his lips, he said, "I love you, too."

"I am going to start moving now," he said a moment later.

"Okay," Xie Xingfang nodded with her slender legs spread wide open.

Su Yang firmly grasped her soft thighs and began moving his h.i.p.s shortly later, pumping his rod in and out of her small hole.

"Ahh~!"

Although it was still painful for Xie Xingfang at first and many minutes later, the pain eventually lessened, allowing her to fully indulge herself in the heavenly pleasure that wrapped around her body like a soft and warm blanket.

"Mmm~!"

"Aaaahn~"

Xie Xingfang m.o.a.ned elegantly in a soft voice, and Su Yang's rod would stiffen a little more every time her heavenly voice tingled in his ears.

"I want to embrace you, Su Yang." Xie Xingfang suddenly said to him with her arms spread.

Su Yang nodded, and he lifted her body, allowing her to embrace his body while he continued to pound her lower mouth in the sitting position.

Many minutes later, Xie Xingfang said, "Let me please you now, Su Yang."

After saying that, she placed her warm hands onto his chest, before gently pushing his body onto the mattress. Once Su Yang was laying down, Xie Xingfang stood up and sat on his body, and she began riding his body like a horse.

"Aaahh~!"

"Aaaahn~!"

"Aaah~!"

Xie Xingfang m.o.a.ned loudly with passion in her voice as she moved her h.i.p.s in a humping motion, thrusting Su Yang's stiff rod deep into her body.

Once Xie Xingfang began to slow down from exhaustion, Su Yang firmly grabbed onto her h.i.p.s and lifted his own lower body, causing Xie Xingfang to fall onto his chest.

He then began moving his h.i.p.s up and down, thrusting his pole in and out of her slippery hole.

However, no matter how many times he penetrated or stretched Xie Xingfang's small hole, the tightness remained the same. In fact, it only became tighter as Xie Xingfang's l.u.s.tful nature increased. Furthermore, no matter how tight Xie Xingfang's hole was squeezing his rod, it did not feel painful or uncomfortable, only the opposite!

'What an amazing body! Xie Xingfang, you are truly a phenomenal woman!' Su Yang couldn't help but admire the feeling of Xie Xingfang's body. Even in his previous life, there were very few women who could satisfy his little brother to such an extent so naturally without the use of any dual cultivation techniques, and it was as though Xie Xingfang's body was made to please him.

After a few more minutes of cultivating, Su Yang said, "I am going to release my Yang Qi now."

"Go ahead! Fill my body with your essence!" Xie Xingfang said.

The next moment—

"Aaaaah~! It's so hot~" Xie Xingfang m.o.a.ned loudly as Su Yang's burning hot Yang Qi filled her small hole.

"Haaa... haaa... haaaa..."

Xie Xingfang panted heavily while she rested on Su Yang's chest that was surprisingly cool when her own body was covered in sweat.

While Xie Xingfang rested, Su Yang spoke, "Xing'er, you want to follow me to the Divine Heavens, right?"

"I don't care where you go, Su Yang. I only want to be by your side," she mumbled in a low voice.

"Then do you want my Family Seal?" he asked.

"Family Seal... the same ones as those girls from the Holy Central Continent...?"

"That's right. However, there are family rules everyone must abide by." Su Yang proceeded to explain to her the Family Seal and the family rules within the Su Family.

"What do you think? Do you accept?"

"Yes, I accept..." she gently nodded.

"Then I have another proposal for you," Su Yang continued.

"Proposal?"

"Yes, and you are the first woman to officially receive this proposal, as I have never seriously asked another woman this even in my previous life."

Hearing such words, Xie Xingfang lifted her head to look at him with a surprised face, her eyes filled with curiosity and enthusiasm.

"Xing'er... do you want to bear my child?" Su Yang asked her with a serious expression on his face.

"You want me to... bear your child?" Xie Xingfang's eyes widened with shock, as she didn't expect things to move this fast.

"You don't want to?"

"T-That's not it! I am just surprised..." she quickly responded.

And she continued, "Can I really bear your child, Su Yang?"

"I did ask you, didn't I? Even I wouldn't dare to tease you with something like this," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"I am willing!" Xie Xingfang immediately said afterward. "I want to bear your child, Su Yang! No, please let me bear your child!"

Su Yang suddenly poked her nose and said with a smile, "Why are you begging? I am the one asking you to bear my child, silly."

Sometime later, they began cultivating again with the intent of creating their first child together.

"This will not only give you the Family Seal but also a baby, Xing'er!" Su Yang said to her.

"Go ahead, Su Yang! I.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.e me! One, two, three— I am willing to bear as many children as you want me to bear!" Xie Xingfang spoke in a passionate voice.

A few moments later, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into Xie Xingfang's body, and his tiny white warriors immediately began working on invading and fertilizing her egg.

Chapter 710 - Purple Qilin's Blood

After squeezing out the last drop of his Yang Qi into Xie Xingfang's body, Su Yang removed his divine rod from her hole before sealing it with a talisman to contain his Yang Qi inside her body for guaranteed fertilization.

"Su Yang..." Xie Xingfang looked at him with a passionate gaze as she laid on the mattress with her body completely exhausted and glistening with sweat.

"How do you feel?" Su Yang asked as he laid beside her.

"Like I am dreaming..." she said in a low voice and a warm smile on her face.

Su Yang chuckled at her answer before smearing some of his blood onto the Family Seal that had appeared on Xie Xingfang's body.

"I am going to cultivate a bit," Su Yang then said to her.

Sometime later, a profound aura emitted from Su Yang's body as he had a breakthrough, reaching the ninth level Heavenly Spirit Realm.

"You can continue to rest up here while I wait for the Purple Qilin. Now that I also have the Thousand Poisons Body, I no longer have to worry about the poison mist," he said to Xie Xingfang.

And before leaving her side, Su Yang formed a concealment formation around the flying boat so that Xie Xingfang could rest peacefully.

After returning to the Purple Qilin's nest, Su Yang found a place to sit down and continued cultivating. Although he now has the Thousand Poisons Body from taking Xie Xingfang's v.i.r.g.i.nity, he still needed to control it and slowly merge it with his physique so that it won't affect the rest of his body in the future. And since he has already done this over 100,000 times with 100,000 Heavenly Constitution, the process was completed as easy as it was breathing.

Of course, since the Thousand Poisons Body originally belonged to Xie Xingfang and he simply absorbed some of its power, it wasn't as powerful as the 'Thousand Poisons Body' and was only as effective as the Hundred Poisons Body.

If Su Yang really wanted the original strength of the Thousand Poisons Body, he would need to use some evil cultivation technique to forcefully take Xie Xingfang's Heavenly Constitution for himself. However, that would result in Xie Xingfang losing her Heavenly Constitution, and only evil Cultivators would resort to such foul tactics.

With that being said, even though his Thousand Poisons Body is not powerful as it should be, it was more than enough to resist the poison mist within the Abandoned Forest.

After waiting a couple of hours, Su Yang suddenly opened his eyes.

A second later, the earth trembled, and a loud roar resounded above him as the Purple Qilin appeared.

"So you're finally back, huh?" Su Yang mumbled as he stood up and looked at the Purple Qilin that was emitting the power at the peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm, which was far stronger than what Xie Wang had estimated.

ROOOOOOAR

The Purple Qilin released another ear-piercing cry when it saw that a human had invaded its territory that also housed its unborn child.

"Let's get this over with. I don't like the air in this place; it smells like shit." Su Yang calmly approached the Purple Qilin with Sword Qi radiating from his body.

The Purple Qilin immediately rushed at Su Yang with its mouth wide open before it suddenly spat out a large blob of toxic spit at him.

Boom!

The Sword Qi around Su Yang exploded, destroying the toxic spit before it could even reach him.

"How disgusting." Su Yang shook his head, and he casually waved his sleeves.

Whoosh!

An enormous arc of sword light suddenly flew at the Purple Qilin.

And just as the Sword Qi was about to slice the Purple Qilin in half, it suddenly jumped back and disappeared into this portal, dodging the Sword Qi.

Su Yang raised an eyebrow after seeing this, but he did not panic.

After a moment of silence and stillness, Su Yang suddenly turned around while swinging his arm.

Whoosh!

Another blade of Sword Qi flew from his arm, yet there was nothing in the direction that he'd just attacked.

However, a second later, a portal appeared where the Sword Qi was flying, and right as the Purple Qilin popped its head out of the portal, the Sword Qi was already in front of its face.

Sha!

The Purple Qilin was immediately beheaded, and the rest of its body fell out of the portal a second later.

Su Yang immediately retrieved multiple vials from his storage ring to collect the Purple Qilin's blood until he had over a hundred vials of Purple Qilin blood which was more than required to heal Xie Xingfang's condition.

Once he'd collected nearly all of the Purple Qilin's blood, Su Yang went to pick up the large egg inside the nest before returning to Xie Xingfang's side.

"Do you have the Purple Qilin's blood?" Xie Xingfang asked after seeing him.

"I do. Are you ready to return home?"

She nodded.

After storing the mattress back into his storage ring, Su Yang controlled the flying ship and flew back to Snowfall City with Xie Xingfang sitting directly beside him and with her head resting on his shoulders, looking like intimate couples.

Sometime later, they returned to the others.

"Su Yang! Xing'er! You're back! Do you have the Purple Qilin's blood?!" Xie Wang greeted them with a nervous face.

"Yes, they're right here." Su Yang showed him the vials.

"Ahahaha! This is perfect! Now Xing'er can finally be healed!" Xie Wang laughed in excitement.

Meanwhile, Lord Xie was silently staring at Xie Xingfang with a puzzled expression on his face.

'Is it just me or is there something different about Xing'er?' he wondered to himself.

He then noticed that Xie Xingfang was standing much closer to Su Yang than she normally would in the past— so close that they were nearly clinging to each other.

As for the three ladies with Su Yang's Family Seal, they immediately realized the situation once they saw Xie Xingfang and felt a connection with her.

'So you've finally accepted your feelings, huh?' Lian Li said to herself with a slight smile on her face.

Chapter 711 - Creating the Antidote

"Anyway, what are we waiting for? Now that we have collected all of the ingredients, let's hurry up and heal Xing'er!" Xie Wang said a moment later.

"Calm down, old man. There's no need to be so impatient. Nothing will have to Xing'er even if we wait a few more days," Su Yang said to him.

"Huh? Why wait when we can heal her now?" Xie Wang asked him with wide eyes.

Su Yang shook his head and said, "Just because we have the ingredients does not mean we can immediately use them. We will need at least another week to prepare the antidote for her condition."

"Is that so..." Xie Wang nodded, and then he looked at the large egg in Su Yang's hands and asked, "By the way, what kind of egg is that? I have never seen anything like that before."

"That's the Purple Qilin's unborn baby. We brought it back with us hoping to grow and train it to become a powerful Guardian Spirit for the Eastern Continent," Xie Xingfang said.

"What?! The Purple Qilin's baby?!" Xie Wang and Lord Xie exclaimed at the same time.

"Purple Qilins?" Lian Li raised her eyebrows, hearing of their existence for the first time since they did not exist in the Holy Central Continent.

"Even if you say that... How exactly do we train Purple Qilins? And how long do they usually take to hatch?" Lord Xie asked.

"Uhh..." Xie Xingfang turned to look at Su Yang for help.

Su Yang looked at the Purple Qilin egg for a moment before speaking, "Judging from the spiritual energy coming from this thing, it should hatch within four to six months."

"Six months, huh. That's not bad."

"As for training Purple Qilins... I have no idea since they're not really Guardian Spirits. Though, Purple Qilins obey the strong, so as long as assert your dominance and let it know that you are its owner, it should listen to you."

"Eh? We cannot train it as a Guardian Spirit?" Xie Xingfang said in a surprised voice.

Su Yang shook his head and said, "Guardian Spirits are called Guardian Spirits for a reason— not every magical beast has the capability to become a Guardian Beast. However, that is not to say you cannot train magical beasts to act like one, as the concept is pretty much the same."

"I see..." Xie Xingfang nodded.

"Anyway, you can take this thing. I am going to prepare the medicine for Xing'er. Ah, in the meantime, bring me some more ingredients," Su Yang said as he handed the large egg to Xie Wang before pulling out a piece of paper and brush.

After writing a list of things, he handed the list to Lord Xie and said, "The ingredients listed there are neither rare nor hard to find, but I will need them in large quantities. Have it ready before the medicine is ready next week."

"..."

Lord Xie was speechless. When did the Xie Family start working for Su Yang, and why are they being treated as though they were his servants?

But alas, as much as he wanted to complain, he didn't dare to utter a single word, as he had enough of being scolded by Su Yang, and it was much easier to just do as he was told than to argue with Su Yang since it was impossible to win against him.

After handing the list of ingredients to Lord Xie, Su Yang said, "I am going to go into closed cultivation for an entire week until the medicine is ready. Do not disturb me until then."

The people there nodded before watching Su Yang calmly return to his room.

Once Su Yang locked himself inside his room, he retrieved all of the ingredients needed to create the antidote and a cauldron and began working.

Meanwhile, the Xie Family scrambled to gather the new ingredients listed by Su Yang.

"Heavens, why does he need so much medicine? They may not be rare, but wanting such large quantities of medicine with such a short notice is also as difficult as gathering rare medicine!" Lord Xie complained to the empty air as he organized the entire thing.

"This is enough medicine to last an entire sect for multiple years or treat over one million patients!"

Meanwhile, Xie Xingfang was dragged by Zhu Mengyi and the other ladies into another room, where they spent an entire week talking to each other about their experience with Su Yang and anything related to Su Yang, almost like a group of girls during a sleepover.

A week passed in the blink of an eye, and after leaving his room, Su Yang went to look for Lord Xie to retrieve his ingredients.

"Do you have them?" Su Yang asked Lord Xie, who had an annoyed expression on his face.

"Take it." Lord Xie tossed a storage ring to Su Yang.

"What about the antidote? Is it complete?" Lord Xie asked Su Yang afterward.

"Yes. I am going to treat Xing'er now." Su Yang nodded.

"Really? I will come with you." Lord Xie said.

"Do whatever you want."

Lord Xie then followed Su Yang around.

Sometime later, everyone was gathered before Su Yang.

"Xing'er, I am going to treat your body today," Su Yang said to her.

"Okay. I just need to bathe in it, right? The bath is already prepared, we can do this whenever—"

"We're going to do this elsewhere," Su Yang suddenly interrupted her.

"Huh? Where are we going to go?" Xie Xingfang asked with raised eyebrows.

"Follow me."

Su Yang proceeded to lead everyone outside Snowfall City and towards the mountain range a few miles away.

"This direction is... The Celestial Pond?" Xie Wang immediately realized where Su Yang was trying to bring them.

"That's right." Su Yang nodded.

"But the Celestial Pond is closed already..." Liu Lanzhi said to him, still feeling slightly bitter about what had happened.

"Closed? We'll see about that," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

Chapter 712 - Opening the Formation

After reaching the location that contained the Celestial Pond, Su Yang proceeded to stare at the empty space for many minutes in silence.

Meanwhile, the others there wondered what he was doing.

"What's he doing?" Zhu Mengyi asked out loud, as this is her first time being there.

"He's probably trying to break the formation that conceals the location of the Celestial Pond," Liu Lanzhi said, and she proceeded to explain to them the Celestial Pond in detail.

"The Celestial Pond only opens once every 100 years for seven days before closing again. However, Su Yang thinks he can open the Celestial Pond sooner than that. Though, even if he can open the portal to the Celestial Pond, I don't know how he'll use the Celestial Pond since it recently dried up."

"Lord Xie, if I recall correctly, you doubted my abilities, right? You think I cannot open the portal to the Celestial Pond by myself, right?" Su Yang suddenly looked at Lord Xie with a smile on his face.

"..."

Lord Xie sighed inwardly, as he can already imagine the humiliation that he's about to experience once again.

"That's right." However, Lord Xie did not back down and nodded his head with a serious expression on his face.

"And even if you somehow manage to crack the formation and open the portal to the Celestial Pond, the Celestial Pond has already dried up its resources and unless you have heaven-defying abilities to restore the Celestial Pond, even you cannot do anything about it!"

"You sound very confident about that, little boy. But are you confident enough to make another bet with me?" Su Yang narrowed his eyes at Lord Xie.

"L-Little boy?"

A strong chill appeared in Lord Xie's spine, and his body trembled a second later, yet he didn't dare to refute Su Yang, as he was indeed a mere child in the presence of someone who used to be an Immortal.

"If you want me to run around the city n.a.k.e.d then I will have to refuse..." Lord Xie narrowed his eyes and said.

"Hahaha... Don't worry, I won't ask for something like that. Instead, if I manage to open the formation and restore the Celestial Pond, I will take something you value the most in this world," Su Yang said, dumbfounding him.

"What I value the most in this world?" Lord Xie raised his eyebrows in a puzzled manner. What did Su Yang mean by that? He couldn't understand the meaning behind Su Yang's words as it was too vague.

Meanwhile, Xie Xingfang immediately realized Su Yang's intent and blushed in the background.

"In return, if I cannot break the formation or restore the Celestial Pond, I will give you a Divine-grade cultivation technique and a Divine-grade martial technique that is above the Immortal-grade." Su Yang suddenly said, shocking everybody there.

"Divine-grade cultivation technique and martial technique?! Are you serious?!" Lord Xie exclaimed in disbelief.

"Yes, it's something that belongs to the Divine Heavens." Su Yang nodded.

"Deal!" Lord Xie immediately said a second later, as he was not willing to let go of such a chance no matter what he had to sacrifice!

"Very well..." A mysterious smile appeared on Su Yang's face before he turned around and returned to facing the empty air.

A few minutes later, Su Yang finally moved, and he gently tapped the empty air with his finger that was glowing golden light before drawing a complex pattern in the air, making it seem as though a firefly was flying around.

After drawing the first symbol in the air, Su Yang continued onto the second one... a third symbol... until he drew 99 symbols in the air.

"This is the last one." Su Yang's eyes then flickered with a profound light, and he stabbed his finger into the air as though it was a sword, creating a streak of golden light in the air.

Clang!

A massive crack suddenly appeared in the air before exploding into countless fragments, revealing the hidden portal.

"Although I do not know who placed this formation here, it's actually quite complex. Furthermore, if one tries to force their way through the formation, it will explode, and the formation contains enough spiritual energy to blow up everyone here and Snowfall City instantly," Su Yang said afterward.

"WHAT?!"

Everybody there exclaimed in a shocked voice after hearing this shocking revelation. The formation could've exploded and destroyed the entire city? That's ridiculous!

"And you didn't even try to warn us before trying?! What if you'd screwed up?! You would've killed all of us!" Lord Xie exclaimed in an angry voice.

"Hahaha... that's only if I tried to force my way through it. I didn't do that, so even if I'd failed, it wouldn't explode." Su Yang laughed at his reaction.

"Then what did you do?" Lord Xie asked him.

"I opened it with the key, that's all." Su Yang shrugged.

"That doesn't even make any sense!" Lord Xie frowned.

"It's the difference between someone opening a closed door with the keys and another opening the door with a forceful kick. It's two completely different things," Su Yang shook his head and said.

"Anyway, now that the portal to the Celestial Pond is opened, let's hurry and deal with the other problem— restoring the Celestial Pond."

Su Yang then jumped into the portal without any hesitation, and the others quickly followed.

'Can Su Yang really restore the Celestial Pond?' Lord Xie pondered to himself with a serious expression on his face as he entered the portal, as that would, without doubt, shake the entire world, allowing them to use the Celestial Pond multiple times without needing to wait 100 years every single time!

Sometime later, once everyone was inside the portal, they approached the dried-up Celestial Pond and watched as Su Yang stood beside the golden tree before placing his hands onto it and closing his eyes, seemingly trying to analyze it.

Many minutes of silence later, Su Yang opened his eyes, and he turned to look at Lord Xie with a smile on his face, "Make sure you watch closely. You don't want to miss this, as this will be the moment I take your most valuable treasure."

Chapter 713 - Restoring the Celestial Pond

"If you can restore the Celestial Pond then hurry up and do it..." Lord Xie said in a sighing voice, already feeling defeated despite nothing has happened yet.

Su Yang then retrieved the ingredients he'd asked Lord Xie to obtain right before he entered closed cultivation and tossed them all into the empty Celestial Pond.

"What the heck? This is why he wanted those ingredients? For the Celestial Pond?" Lord Xie watched with wide eyes as Su Yang filled the small pond to the brim with enough medicine and herbs to last for many years.

Once everything was inside the pond, Su Yang turned to look at Zhu Mengyi and said, "Go ahead and use your Alchemy Flames to burn everything in here."

"Huh?" Zhu Mengyi looked at him with wide eyes.

"You want me to burn everything? Like until it turns to ashes?"

She asked him just in case.

"Yes." Su Yang immediately nodded.

"If you say so..." Zhe Mengyi then tossed a ball of her Azure Flames into the pond, quickly burning the medicine and herbs until only ashes remained.

"What on earth...?" Lord Xie stared at the pitch-black pond with a dazed expression on his face.

"How the hell is this going to restore the Celestial Pond?!"

He couldn't help but exclaim a moment later.

"Just shut up for a minute and watch won't you?" Su Yang shook his head before returning to the Celestial Pond that is now filled with burnt medicine and herbs.

He then retrieved a glass bottle from his storage ring that contained some mysterious liquid, and instead of pouring it into the pond of burnt medicine, he splashed it onto the golden tree.

A few moments later, the golden tree released a drop of golden liquid, falling directly into the burnt medicines in the pond.

The moment the drop of golden liquid from the tree touched the burnt medicine, almost as though it was being dyed, all of the burnt medicine in the pond quickly turned gold in a ripple effect!

"What the...?" Lord Xie and the others watched with wide eyes as the burnt medicine suddenly turned into something entirely different!

Once all of the burnt medicine turned golden, Su Yang retrieved another bottle of liquid and poured it into the golden medicine.

A few seconds later, the golden medicine began melting until the entire Celestial Pond was filled with golden water again, resembling what the Celestial Pond looked like before it had its resources dried up!

"Heavens! The Celestial Pond has been restored!" Xie Wang cried out loud when he sensed the powerful spiritual energy emitting from the golden water. In fact, the water feels even more luxurious than normally!

"This is..." Lord Xie suddenly began approaching the Celestial Pond.

Once he was right before it, he kneeled on the ground and scooped up a handful of the golden water before staring at it intensively in silence.

A few moments later, Lord Xie placed the golden water back into the pond before turning to look at Su Yang with a perplexed expression on his face.

"You win. What do you want from me?" Lord Xie spoke in a defeated voice.

However, despite losing the bet, he did not feel bitterness. In fact, he was overwhelmed with excitement and delight.

And hearing Lord Xie's question, a smile appeared on Su Yang's face as he slowly lifted his arm and pointed towards Xie Xingfang's direction.

"Your daughter— I'll be taking Xing'er," Su Yang spoke in a calm voice.

"You... what?" Lord Xie could feel his eyes popping out of its sockets when he heard Su Yang's words.

Even Xie Wang was no different as he stared at Su Yang with his eyes and mouth as wide as saucers.

Meanwhile, Xie Xingfang lowered her head slightly to hide the redness and smile on her face. Even Liu Lanzhi and the other two disciples couldn't believe their ears and stood there with a dazed expression on their faces.

"Did you not hear me? I said I am going to take Xing'er with me, as she is one of your most valued treasures." Su Yang repeated a smile on his face.

He then turned to look at Xie Xingfang and spoke, "Xing'er, come over here."

Xie Xingfang nodded in a bashful manner before walking to stand beside him.

Su Yang then wrapped his arm around Xie Xingfang's shoulder before continuing with a smirk on his face, "Xing'er, your father has lost a bet with me, so I'll be taking you for compensation, and you'll be my woman from now on."

"Outrageous!" Lord Xie shouted in an angry voice a moment later, creating ripples in the Celestial Pond.

"What are you angry about? You lost a bet, and as agreed, I'll be taking your most valued treasure, which is your daughter, Xing'er. Or are you going to go back on your words, huh?" Su Yang shook his head.

"You... you...!" Lord Xie pointed at him with his entire body trembling from anger. "You tricked me, you bastard!"

"Su Yang, you can stop teasing my father now," Xie Xingfang said to him when things were starting to get out of control.

"W-What?" Lord Xie turned to look at Xie Xingfang with a dumbfounded gaze. He was being teased?

Xie Xingfang then turned to look at her father and spoke with a serious expression on her beautiful face, "Father, your bet with Su Yang has nothing to do with this, as I would've followed Su Yang regardless of the results."

"You... huh?" Lord Xie still held a dumbfounded expression on his face like a dumb chicken, as he was unable to comprehend the situation.

Xie Wang, on the other hand, shook his head with a bittersweet smile on his face as he understood everything.

Seeing that her father was still puzzled about the situation, Xie Xingfang sighed in a low voice before turning to look at Su Yang.

"Su Yang, kiss me," she said to him with a rosy blush on her face.

"With pleasure," Su Yang immediately lifted her chin with his hands before kissing her on the lips directly in front of Lord Xie.

"Oh..."

The next moment, Lord Xie's eyes rolled behind his head and fainted, and he fell into the Celestial Pond a second later, dumbfounding everyone there with his exaggerated reaction.

Chapter 714 - You'll Never Win Against Him

"Fa-Father?!" Xie Xingfang shouted in a surprised voice before she quickly went to drag Lord Xie out of the Celestial Pond so that he wouldn't drown, which will surely become one of the most ridiculous deaths ever in history for a Cultivator at the Heavenly Spirit Realm.

"If he cannot handle a little kiss on the lips, who knows how he'll react once he learns about 'that'..." Su Yang shook his head at Lord Xie's exaggerated reaction.

"Xing'er... Have you really decided to follow him?" Xie Wang suddenly approached them and asked her.

"Un." Xie Xingfang nodded her head before speaking, "I no longer have any more hesitation or doubt in my mind or heart. I want to follow Su Yang no matter where he goes."

Xie Wang released a long sigh before nodding, "I knew this day would come sooner or later. Despite your hesitation before, I knew it wouldn't last long with someone like Su Yang."

He then looked at Su Yang and continued, "Congratulations on conquering my granddaughter, Su Yang. If it had been anyone else, I wouldn't be this calm or supportive. However, you... I know you will take care of her no matter where you guys decide to go."

Xie Wang then picked up Lord Xie and said, "I'll take him back home for now, and don't you dare come back without a healthy body again."

After Xie Wang left the Celestial Pond with Lord Xie, the others there also decided to leave them alone.

"Good luck, Su Yang, Xing'er..." Liu Lanzhi said to them before leaving.

Once everyone disappeared from the Celestial Pond, leaving Su Yang and Xie Xingfang alone, Su Yang said, "Let's get this over with, shall we?"

Xie Xingfang nodded.

"We are going to use the Celestial Pond as your bath, as that would increase the effects of the poison and improve the chances of healing your body," Su Yang said.

"Won't that also affect the Celestial Pond itself? If we contaminate it with the poison..." Xie Xingfang expressed her concerns.

"You don't have to worry about contaminating the Celestial Pond with the poison, Xing'er, since the real Celestial Pond is this tree right here, and as long as we don't get it into its roots, it'll be fine. I have already created a formation around the tree to protect it against the poison later," Su Yang explained to her, relieving her of her worries.

Su Yang then retrieved a dozen pills and around 7 bottles containing unknown liquids, placing them right in front of the Celestial Pond.

"Are those...?" Xie Xingfang could feel the toxicity coming from these items even without touching it, feeling as though she had returned to the Abandoned Forest.

"Yes, these are the ingredients that were gathered for this occasion. Every single one of these could instantly kill even a Sovereign Spirit Realm Cultivator before they can open their mouth and scream."

Xie Xingfang began to sweat after hearing his words. Despite having the Thousand Poisons Body and being immune to nearly every poison in existence, bathing in such potent poison still caused her spirit to tremble.

Seeing how Xie Xingfang was trying to remain calm and hide her nervousness, Su Yang chuckled and said, "Don't worry, none of these poison items would affect you. If you still had the Hundred Poisons Body then perhaps you should be worried, but the current you can eat these and still be fine."

And he continued, "Anyway, I am going to toss these into the Celestial Pond one at a time, and you will bathe in it at least 10 hours every time. This is going to take a few days, so you should get as comfortable as possible."

Xie Xingfang understood the meaning behind his words and began to remove her clothes, revealing her slender body and jadelike skin.

"Oh, you can also take off that talisman." Su Yang pointed at the area between her legs.

Xie Xingfang nodded and peeled the talisman from her slit, and Yang Qi immediately began flowing out like a waterfall.

'There's so much...' Xie Xingfang thought to herself as the Yang Qi dripped onto the floor, creating a small puddle beneath her.

"Hm?" Xie Xingfang suddenly realized something, and she turned to look at Su Yang with wide eyes. "Does... Does this mean I am already pregnant?"

Hearing her question, Su Yang nodded with a warm smile on his face, "Yes, your egg should be fertilized by now."

A bright smile appeared on Xie Xingfang's face, and she uncontrollably embraced him.

"Thank you, Su Yang!" she said in an excited voice.

"Me, too, Xing'er. I am thankful that you chose me." Su Yang said.

Sometime later, Su Yang tossed one of the poison pills into the Celestial Pond, instantly turning the golden liquid into a greyish color.

"Go ahead and start cultivating inside. I will let you know when you can stop so you can focus on cultivation," Su Yang said to her afterward.

"Okay."

Xie Xingfang dipped her toes on the water before stepping into the Celestial Pond and submerging herself in the toxic water.

Once Xie Xingfang closed her eyes, Su Yang also sat down and proceeded to watch over her like a Guardian Spirit.

Meanwhile, back at the Xie Family's house, Lord Xie finally woke up.

"What happened? Where am I?" Lord Xie mumbled in a confused voice as he opened his eyes.

"You're back in your room, my son." Xie Wang, who was sitting not far away, said to him.

"Father...? Ah! Xing'er!" Lord Xie quickly recalled what happened at the Celestial Pond and said, "T-Tell me that was a dream! That my daughter didn't kiss Su Yang right before my eyes!"

Hearing his words, Xie Wang smiled and said, "You should have known about Xing'er's feelings for Su Yang long ago so why are you acting so shocked now? Just give up and let Su Yang have her— you'll never win against him, anyway."

"..." Lord Xie frowned after hearing Xie Wang's words, but he didn't know how to respond to such words, as he was unable to refute Xie Wang's words.

Chapter 715 - Xie Xingfang's Recovery

"Xing'er... How is she doing? What about her condition?" Lord Xie finally spoke after many minutes of silently sitting in his bed with a dazed expression.

"Su Yang should be treating her right now. We can only wait here while they do their thing." Xie Wang said.

Lord Xie turned silent again for a few more minutes before he spoke, "Su Yang... Do you think he'll stay here and take my place in the future if I begged him?"

"What do you think?" Xie Wang shook his head, and he continued, "I think we both know the answer to that question."

"Haaa..." Lord Xie sighed, and he turned to look at the ceiling.

"Looks like I will have to find another heir. However, in order to do that, I will have to find another wife..." Lord Xie sighed again afterward.

"That's why I told you to find another partner when your previous wife passed in that accident, as things like this can happen." Xie Wang shook his head.

"But you also only had one child! Me!" Lord Xie then said.

"Well, I didn't have a daughter, nor is there someone like Su Yang running around during my generation." Xie Wang shrugged. He cannot imagine having to deal with Su Yang when he still sat on the throne.

"Whatever..." Lord Xie shook his head before getting out of the bed.

"Where are you going now?"

"I'm going to look for another partner!" Lord Xie said.

"Now?" Xie Wang looked at him with raised eyebrows, and he continued, "With Su Yang still here? If I were you, I would wait until he leaves this world before you bring another woman into this household. Who knows what might happen with Su Yang here."

"..."

Lord Xie nearly tripped on empty air after hearing Xie Wang's words. However, after pondering about Xie Wang's words, Lord Xie found Xie Wang's words quite logical and decided that it would be safer to wait until Su Yang left this world.

Meanwhile, in the Celestial Pond, Su Yang tossed the second poison pill into the water, causing the greyish water to become even darker and grimmer.

About ten hours later, Su Yang tossed another poison pill into the water.

He continued this action until all of the poison pills were dumped into the water.

Once all of the pills had gone into the water, Su Yang began pouring the bottles of liquid into the Celestial Pond, turning the already black water even darker— until it resembled the night sky.

Meanwhile, Xie Xingfang could feel her body heating up more and more as time passed until she was feeling no different than taking a steaming hot bath without the clean water and the steam.

"If you are feeling a sensation that means the treatment is working. It may hurt a bit but you need to endure it," Su Yang said to her after noticing that she was struggling.

Xie Xingfang nodded with her eyes closed.

Many hours later, Su Yang poured the final bottle of liquid into the Celestial Pond.

The instant this liquid touched the pitch-black water, as though a miracle had happened, the black water instantly cleared up, becoming nearly transparent.

Su Yang looked at Xie Xingfang's beautiful body through the transparent water, yet there was not a single hint of lust in his gaze.

A few more minutes later, blood began seeping through Xie Xingfang's body, dyeing the transparent blood red.

Once the Celestial Pond had turned completely bloody, the water began to boil, causing Xie Xingfang's body to sweat like crazy.

Seeing this, Su Yang retrieved a medical herb from his storage ring and tossed it into the boiling water, quickly calming it down within a few seconds.

A few more hours later, Su Yang spoke out loud, "Xing'er, you can stop cultivating now."

Xie Xingfang opened her eyes after hearing his voice, and she turned to look at him, "Am I...?"

Su Yang nodded and said, "Yes, all of the poison within your blood has been ejected from your body. Take a look around you."

It was at this moment Xie Xingfang noticed that she was submerged in bloody water.

Seeing this, Xie Xingfang quickly left the Celestial Pond.

Su Yang handed her a clean towel and said, "Don't put on your clothes yet."

"Okay...?" Xie Xingfang nodded as she dried her body, wondering what else needed to be done.

Su Yang then waved his sleeves, surrounding the Celestial Pond with Alchemy Flames.

A few minutes later, all of the water in the Celestial Pond evaporated from the intense heat coming from the alchemy flames.

Once the Celestial Pond was empty again, Su Yang retrieved some herbs and tossed them into the Celestial Pond before burning them until black.

"This is..." Xie Xingfang immediately realized what Su Yang was trying to do after witnessing the familiar process. "You're going to restore the Celestial Pond again?"

"That's right. And to celebrate your recovery, we're going to have some fun in it." Su Yang responded with a calm smile on his face.

"Have some fun... in the Celestial Pond?" Xie Xingfang's eyes widened with surprise after hearing his words.

"You don't want to?" Su Yang asked her as he continued to restore the Celestial Pond.

"I-I do!" she quickly said.

Su Yang then said, "Once we have some fun alone, I'll call in the others."

"The others... I understand." Xie Xingfang nodded with a resolute expression on her face, as she has already accepted the fact that she won't always be alone with him and that it was only natural for one man with many partners to have multiple people on the same bed at once.

Seeing this, Su Yang smiled.

A few minutes later, once the Celestial Pond has been restored for a second time, Su Yang removed his clothes, and he picked up Xie Xingfang like a princess before entering the golden water.

Shortly after entering the Celestial Pond, Su Yang inserted his rod into Xie Xingfang's cave and began pounding her in the water, creating wave-like ripples in the Celestial Pond.

Chapter 716 - Four Peerless Beauties in the Celestial Pond

"Aah~!"

"Aaahn~!"

"Aaaaaahhh~!"

Xie Xingfang moaned passionately as Su Yang had his fingers firmly wrapped around her slender arms and pounded her lustful body from behind.

The two of them have been cultivating for many hours now, as Su Yang cultivated with Xie Xingfang without using any dual cultivation techniques, allowing her to endure it for much longer.

After a few more minutes, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into her hole for the dozenth time, and the excess Yang Qi flowed into the Celestial Pond.

"Haa... haaa... haaa... I need a break, Su Yang..." Xie Xingfang said afterward.

"Okay." Su Yang nodded, and Xie Xingfang sat in the Celestial Pond a moment later like she was taking a casual bath.

"You can call the others in here if you want," Xie Xingfang suddenly said.

Su Yang then said, "Watch this."

He closed his eyes and remained silent for the next few seconds.

Meanwhile, inside their room in the Xie Family's household, Wu Jingjing, Zhu Mengyi, and Lian Li could suddenly feel their Family Seals heating up, almost as though it was beckoning them.

"This is... Su Yang?"

They exchanged glances with each other before turning to look in the direction of the Celestial Pond.

"I think Su Yang is calling us through the Family Seal," Wu Jingjing said.

"I am also getting that feeling!" Zhu Mengyi agreed.

"Let's head to the Celestial Pond and see if that's the case." Lian Li said.

A few moments later, they all flew towards the Celestial Pond.

"Su Yang? What was that feeling coming from the Family Seal? Did you call for us?" Wu Jingjing asked him after they entered the portal to the Celestial Pond.

"Yes, I summoned all of you here so we can cultivate together," Su Yang nodded his head with a smile.

"To cultivate?" They turned to look at Xie Xingfang, who was sitting in the Celestial Pond with an exhausted yet satisfied expression on her face.

"You don't have to if you don't want to," Su Yang said to them.

"Nonsense! I would never refuse to cultivate with you!" Zhu Mengyi said, and then she continued, "However... who's going to take care of the babies while we cultivate?"

Hearing her question, Su Yang snapped his fingers, instantly creating a large black square-shaped formation not far away from the Celestial Pond.

"You can just leave them inside— they'll sleep through the whole thing." Su Yang said with a smile.

Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi walked into the formation a moment later that was as spacious as a small room, and it felt as though they'd suddenly entered the void, but they were surrounded by flickering stars, almost like they were really in the starry sky.

"What is this place? I am getting sleepy just from standing in here" Wu Jingjing asked as she suddenly began yawning.

"It's a formation that naturally puts people to sleep, the background is just there to make it look pretty. I use it to put the kids to sleep whenever I cultivate with their mother so that we won't be disturbed..." Su Yang casually said.

"As expected of you, Su Yang, to have something like this in his sleeves..." Zhu Mengyi said with a dazed expression on her face.

"We still need a bed for—"

Before Wu Jingjing could even finish her sentence, Su Yang waved his sleeves, sending a mattress towards her way.

"..."

Wu Jingjing was speechless. She didn't think he would be this prepared.

A few moments after putting Wu Min and Zhu Jiayi on the soft mattress beside each other, their mothers watched as they fell asleep within a heartbeat.

"Wow... What a wonderful technique this is— Maybe I should learn this for myself when I need some rest..." Wu Jingjing said.

"How long will they be asleep for?" Zhu Mengyi asked.

"The formation doesn't forcefully put them asleep, so they'll wake up normally whenever it happens," Su Yang said.

"Then we need to hurry up and cultivate before they wake up!" Zhu Mengyi said as she quickly removed her clothes and entered the Celestial Pond.

Wu Jingjing and Lian Li smiled and also joined them a moment later.

Once the Celestial Pond was filled with four heavenly goddesses that could topple even an entire kingdom with their beauty alone, Su Yang began pleasing all of them at once.

The water in the Celestial Pond splattered everywhere as they cultivated, and very quickly the ladies' Yin Qi and Su Yang's Yang Qi would fuse with the golden water in the Celestial Pond, creating a unique liquid that would boost their cultivation base significantly.

Su Yang continued to cultivate with the beauties without any breaks for nearly an entire day until the babies woke up and began crying for their mothers.

When that happened, the mothers left the Celestial Pond to tend their daughter, but Lian Li and Xie Xingfang remained in the Celestial Pond and continued to cultivate with Su Yang.

Although it was an awkward feeling at first for the two princesses that had never cultivated in a group before, after being around each other and listening to each other m.o.a.ning for some time, they eventually got used to it.

"Well? What do you think? Did you enjoy it? If not, that's fine too, as I'll make sure we will only do it privately in the future," Su Yang asked the two princesses as they sat beside him with his arms wrapped around their shoulders.

"It was definitely a unique experience... I like it." Lian Li said as she rested her head on his shoulders.

Xie Xingfang spoke afterward, "Although I don't dislike it, and I don't mind doing it occasionally, I still prefer having you to myself."

Su Yang nodded and said, "I understand— I will keep that in mind."

"Anyway, because I forcefully restored the Celestial Pond, it won't last seven days like previously, and we have at most a few more hours before it dries out again."

Lian Li nodded and said, "Then let's continue for a few more hours."

"I like that idea," Su Yang chuckled, and they returned to cultivating.

Chapter 717 - Announcing Their Alliance

Once the Celestial Pond was close to drying up, Su Yang and the ladies stopped their cultivation and left the pond.

"Are we ready to leave this place?" Wu Jingjing asked them after seeing them leave the Celestial Pond.

"Yes, just let me clean this place up a bit." Su Yang said as he waved his sleeves, collecting the dirty water into an empty storage ring.

Afterward, they walked through the portal and left the Celestial Pond.

Sometime later, they returned to the Xie Family's household.

"Are you going to return to the Profound Blossom Sect now?" Xie Wang asked him.

"That's right. Now that Xing'er is healed, you no longer need me here." Su Yang nodded.

Xie Wang then looked at Xie Xingfang and asked her, "What about you, Xing'er? Now that you are following Su Yang, are you going to live in the Profound Blossom Sect with him?"

However, Xie Xingfang shook her head and said, "Since I am going to be following Su Yang in the future to somewhere far away, I'd like to spend the rest of my time in this world with you and father. Do you mind, Su Yang?"

"Why would I? If you ever feel lonely, just send me a message using a message talisman and I'll immediately come here to keep you company," he said with a smile on his face.

"..." Xie Wang looked at them with wide eyes.

"D-Did you two already...?" he asked him in a trembling voice, yet he somehow already knew the answer before they even answered.

"I am already pregnant, grandfather," Xie Xingfang revealed this shocking revelation to him.

"P-P-Pregnant?!" Xie Wang fell onto his butt with a shocked expression on his face, looking as though he'd just seen the ghost of his ancestors.

"Wow, that was fast..." Zhu Mengyi mumbled after hearing that.

"Looks like you'll have another sibling in the near future, Wu Min," Wu Jingjing chuckled.

"Actually, I am pregnant, too." Lian Li suddenly revealed to them.

"Y-You too?" Zhu Mengyi looked at her with wide eyes.

"When did it happen?" Wu Jingjing asked her with a dazed face.

"On our way here from the Holy Central Continent," Lian Li responded with a bashful smile.

"Wow... At this rate, who knows how many children will be in the family by the time we leave this world and head to the Divine Heavens," Zhu Mengyi said.

"The more the merrier," Wu Jingjing giggled.

Sometime later, Xie Wang calmed down and stood back up again.

Then he said with a serious expression on his face, "Congratulations, Xing'er, Su Yang. I cannot wait to see the child and become a great grandfather."

"Thank you, grandfather. By the way, where's my father?" Xie Xingfang finally noticed his absence.

"Oh, he's dealing with a few things now. We plan on announcing the Xie Family's alliance with the Profound Blossom Sect, not to mention the gathering that was requested by Su Yang," Xie Wang said.

"By the way, should we also announce that you and Su Yang are now together? This way, we would stop receiving marriage proposals from the other families."

Xie Xingfang turned to look at Su Yang and asked him, "What do you think, Su Yang?"

"I will let you decide," he said with a smile on his face.

Xie Xingfang pondered for a moment before nodding her head, "I want it to be announced. However, I want to be the one to announce it."

And then she continued, "Su Yang, can you be there with me during the announcement?"

"Of course. When do you want to make the announcement?" Su Yang asked.

"I will do it during your gathering if you don't mind, as everyone is already gathered there."

"Sounds good," Su Yang nodded.

"By the way, Xing'er, let's keep the thing about your pregnancy a secret from my son for now," Xie Wang suddenly said.

"Why?" Xie Xingfang tilted her head.

"Well, he already has enough going on in his mind right now. I don't want to burden him even more with such news for now," Xie Wang said.

"Then when should we let him know?" Xie Xingfang tilted her head.

"We don't. He'll eventually know once he starts your belly blowing up— hahaha!" Xie Wang laughed out loud.

Su Yang merely shook his head with a smile, as this wasn't any of his business.

"Anyway, I will return to the Profound Blossom Sect now," Su Yang said.

"Okay! I will see you soon, Su Yang!" Xie Xingfang gave him a passionate hug and kiss before letting him go.

Sometime later, Su Yang gathered everyone from the Profound Blossom Sect and the Holy Central Continent before boarding the large flying ship and flying back to the Profound Blossom Sect.

Meanwhile, news of the Xie Family and the Profound Blossom Sect forming an alliance began spreading throughout the entire continent like wildfire, shocking everybody that heard this unprecedented news.

"What?! The Xie Family formed an alliance with the Profound Blossom Sect!? What does this mean?! Where does the Profound Blossom Sect stand in terms of their status within the power balance?"

"What will happen to the Elite Sects from now on? How much power does the Profound Blossom Sect hold now compared to the other sects and families?"

Nearly everybody questioned the situation, as they have never experienced something like this before.

However, not only did the Xie Family announce their alliance with the Profound Blossom Sect but they have also announced a gathering for pretty much every sect and family in the Eastern Continent— it was a massive gathering that only happens once every century.

As for the purpose of this gathering, the Xie Family did not say and only mentioned that it was very important. And while it was not mandatory to attend, nobody would dare to miss a summoning by the Xie Family regardless of its importance.

After returning to the Profound Blossom Sect, Su Yang said to Liu Lanzhi and the other disciples that participated in the Celestial Pond, "I know what happened at the Celestial Pond was discouraging, but I have something that should make up for it."

Chapter 718 - Introducing the Family

Liu Lanzhi and the other two disciples looked at Su Yang with anticipation. What could possibly be better than the Celestial Pond that boosts their cultivation base significantly?

Su Yang then retrieved two cultivation techniques and handed them to the two disciples— Disciple Ji and Disciple Chen.

"This is an Immortal-grade cultivation technique. Although the Celestial Pond may affect your cultivation speed, it is only temporary. However, with this cultivation technique, it will be a permanent effect."

Disciple Ji and Disciple Chen accepted their cultivation technique with trembling hands, their expressions blank and seemingly in a daze.

"Thank you, Sect Master!" They bowed to him deeply.

Once the disciples left, Su Yang turned to look at Liu Lanzhi and asked her, "What do you want?"

"You don't have anything prepared for me?" Liu Lanzhi raised her eyebrows.

"Hahaha... Who knows?" A mysterious smile appeared on Su Yang's face.

He then reached into his robes and retrieved a scroll.

"Here," Su Yang extended his arms and offered it to her.

"What's this?" Liu Lanzhi accepted the scroll before opening it to read it.

As Liu Lanzhi read the first sentence, Su Yang spoke, "That's a Divine-grade cultivation technique. It's above the Immortal-grade technique."

"Eh?" Liu Lanzhi immediately stopped reading the scroll and lifted her head to look at him with a surprised face, her eyes blinking in a dazed manner.

Even the other ladies there turned to look at him with wide eyes. Divine-grade cultivation technique? Such a powerful cultivation technique does not yet exist in this world— not even the Holy Central Continent has one!

"D-Divine-grade cultivation technique, you say? And you're giving this to me?" Liu Lanzhi asked him in a dazed voice.

"That's right. You are the Sect Master of the Profound Blossom Sect that is going to be the number one sect in this world in the near future; it's only natural for someone of your stature to have something special like a Divine-grade cultivation technique." Su Yang said to her with a smile on his face.

"..."

Liu Lanzhi was speechless. And after a long moment of silence, tears began flowing from her eyes—tears of happiness.

"Hey, hey. I didn't give you the Divine-grade technique so that I can watch you cry," Su Yang said to her with a smile on his face.

"I'm sorry... I just don't know how else to express my feelings..." Liu Lanzhi said in a trembling voice.

"Just smile and say thank you— that's all you need to do."

Liu Lanzhi nodded before wiping her tears and speaking with a beautiful smile on her face, "Thank you, Su Yang!"

Once Liu Lanzhi returned to the Yin Yang Pavilion and back to her own room, Su Yang turned to look at the three beauties standing behind him with envious gazes.

Su Yang chuckled when he saw this, and he said to them, "There's no need to be envious. Once we return to the Divine Heavens, I will give you all cultivation techniques and martial techniques that far exceed your current understanding."

"Really?" Zhu Mengyi's eyes flashed with excitement.

"Yes. I would give the cultivation techniques to you right now, but it wouldn't do you any good with the low-quality Profound Qi in this world."

"Anyway, I am now going to give you a quick tour around this place before introducing you to the others in the family that is currently in this place," Su Yang said.

The three ladies nodded, and they proceeded to follow Su Yang around the sect.

Of course, the disciples in the sect were greatly dumbfounded when they saw the three peerless beauties following Su Yang, as they have never seen someone so beautiful before, much less three at once in the same place.

However, since two of these beauties were carrying a baby in their arms, the disciples were also greatly confused as to who they were since they didn't think someone like Su Yang would be willing to have children.

"Who are those beauties following the Sect Master? I have never seen them before!"

"I don't know, but they are incredibly beautiful!"

"There's no way someone like that would be a nobody! You can tell at glance just by the profound aura they're emitting that they're all powerful Cultivators!"

"Heavens, I wonder where the Sect Master found them and what are they doing here at the Profound Blossom Sect?"

"Well, knowing the Sect Master, they're probably here to cultivate." One of the disciples said.

"Cultivate? Even though they brought their babies along? I highly doubt it!"

"Don't underestimate the Sect Master! I'm willing to bet that he can seduce even a woman who's currently in the middle of pregnancy with another man!"

As every disciple they passed chatted with each other, Su Yang and the three beauties eventually stopped in front of a medium-sized building.

"What building is this?" Wu Jingjing asked.

"Why don't you take a guess?" Su Yang said with a mysterious smile on his face.

"Hmmm..." Wu Jingjing narrowed her eyes at the building, but she was unable to find anything special about it. However, a moment later, she could feel the Family Seal on her body reacting to this place.

And just as the Family Seal began heating up, the entrance to the building suddenly opened, and a very pretty young lady stepped out of the building.

"Su Yang?" Sun Jingjing raised her eyebrows when she saw him with three beautiful but unfamiliar faces standing outside her house.

Because her Family Seal started warming up, she decided to come outside, expecting to see either Su Yang or Su Liqing as that is the only time her Family Seal would react.

And to her surprise, there were three extremely beautiful fairies that she did not recognize with Su Yang, and she felt a connection with all three of them, indicating that they also had a Family Seal somewhere on their body.

However, two of these three women were carrying a child in their arms, which baffled Sun Jingjing almost instantly, and questions immediately appeared in her head.

Chapter 719 - Introducing the Family(2)

"S-Su Yang...? W-Who are they? And why do I—" Sun Jingjing asked him in a dumbfounded voice as she approached them.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Whatever you're thinking, it's probably right."

"Go ahead, introduce yourselves," Su Yang then said to the three goddesses.

Wu Jingjing was the first to react. She stepped forward and bowed slightly, "Hello, my name is Wu Jingjing, and I am from the Holy Central Continent. This baby in my arms is Wu Min, and she's my daughter with Su Yang."

"D-D-Daughter with Su Yang?!?!?" Sun Jingjing accidentally tripped on herself after hearing such shocking words from Wu Jingjing.

After she recovered from the stumble, Sun Jingjing looked at Zhu Mengyi and spoke in a trembling voice, "Don't tell me she's also..."

"Yes, she's Zhu Jiayi— Su Yang and my daughter! I am called Zhu Mengyi, and I am also from the Holy Central Continent." Zhu Mengyi introduced herself next.

"My name is Lian Li, and I am also from the Holy Central Continent." Lian Li quickly introduced herself.

"Heavens, Su Yang! You disappeared for a month only to return with three beautiful women and two children? You are always full of surprises!" Sun Jingjing said as she approached Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi to take a closer look at the babies.

"Are they really your children, Su Yang? If you tell me this is a prank right now, I promise I won't get angry..." Sun Jingjing looked at him, clearly doubtful whether these two cute babies were really his children.

After all, children require time to make— something he cannot have achieved after leaving for a month. Unless he i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed these women over a year ago, it was simply impossible for him to be the father for these two children. Furthermore, he was only between the Profound Spirit Realm and the True Spirit Realm a year ago. How did he manage to seduce these powerful-looking Cultivators with such an insignificant cultivation base? It would be a miracle if they even paid attention to him, much less cultivate with him.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Let's talk inside. I'll tell you everything that happened, but it's going to be a long story."

"Okay," Sun Jingjing nodded.

Once they went inside her home and sat down, Su Yang began recalling how he met these ladies from the Holy Central Continent and when he i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed them to Sun Jingjing.

A few hours later, once Sun Jingjing had heard their story and their individual background, she sighed out loud, "A child with you, huh? I'm afraid that I'm still too young to have a child— mentally and physically."

Then she looked at Wu Jingjing and said, "Though, to think we have the same given name— what a coincidence, huh?"

"Yes, I am still surprised that you are also a 'Jingjing'." Wu Jingjing chuckled.

"Anyway, I am..." Sun Jingjing proceeded to introduce herself and her own background.

After the three girls chatted with Sun Jingjing for another hour and familiarized themselves with each other, they left her house and followed Su Yang to another place— the Medicine Hall.

"What an energetic young lady that was— I can tell why you choose someone like her to be in the family," Zhu Mengyi said after they left, as she found some similarities between Sun Jingjing and herself during their conversation.

Sometime later, they arrived at the Medicine Hall.

"What do we have here? A medicine store?" Zhu Mengyi immediately picked up the scent of the medicine and herbs inside.

"This is the Medicine Hall. Disciples come here to get treated when they're injured or whatever." Su Yang gave them a brief explanation before walking into the building.

"Su Yang—!"

The disciples inside immediately noticed his presence, but their attention was quickly snatched by the three peerless beauties following behind him, as their presence was simply too overwhelming for these young disciples who were not even at the Earth Spirit Realm.

"I'm here to see Liqing today," Su Yang said to them before he approached the stairs and walked to the second floor.

"Liqing, it's Su Yang."

He knocked on the door and called for her.

A few seconds later, Su Liqing opened the door to let them inside.

"Uh... This is..." Su Liqing was immediately baffled by her Family Seal's reaction to the three women who came with Su Yang, especially the two women who held a baby in their arms.

However, Su Yang didn't delay the reveal this time and introduced the new girls personally, "Everybody, this is Su Liqing who used to be named Lan Liqing and is actually my first cultivation partner in this life. And Liqing, these ladies are from the Holy Central Continent, and as you can tell, they have also accepted my Family Seal."

"Starting from the right we have Lian Li, Zhu Mengyi, and finally, Wu Jingjing.

He then pointed at the two cute creatures and said with a smile on his face, "These two are my daughter, Wu Min and Zhu Jiayi."

"Your... children?" Su Liqing stood there with a blank expression on her face after hearing his words, feeling an indescribable feeling in her heart.

A moment of silence later, to everybody's surprise, tears suddenly began flowing down Su Liqing's face.

"Eh...? What's this? Why am I crying?" Even Su Liqing was surprised by herself when the tears began falling.

And whenever she wiped her tears, even more tears would come out.

"I-I'm sorry, Su Yang, but I don't know why I am..." Su Liqing said to him as she continued to wipe her eyes with her soft sleeves.

"..."

Su Yang was completely speechless for once, as he also didn't know why Su Liqing would suddenly start crying.

The atmosphere became awkward incredibly quickly, and the ladies exchanged glances with each other.

"You can introduce us later, Su Yang... We'll wait outside for now," Wu Jingjing suddenly whispered in his ears.

"Okay." Su Yang nodded.

Wu Jingjing and the others then left the room before closing the door, leaving Su Yang and Su Liqing alone.

Chapter 720 - I Will I.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.e You as Many Times as You Want

Once Wu Jingjing and the other ladies left the room, Su Yang approached the crying Su Liqing and gently placed his arms around her waist, almost as though he was afraid of hurting her.

He then slowly pulled her towards the bed before sitting down and placing Su Liqing to sit on his lap.

"What's the matter, Liqing? If there's anything that's bothering you— anything at all— just let me know and I will immediately deal with it." Su Yang spoke to her in a soft voice, sounding as though he was trying to calm down a crying child.

"And if I did something wrong, you can also tell me and I will—"

Hearing his words, Su Liqing immediately shook her head, and then she said, "There's nothing wrong with you, Su Yang. Nothing at all. However, I really don't know why I am crying. It began flowing unconsciously when I saw the children— your daughters, and I don't know why. Please believe me, Su Yang..."

"The children...? Of course, I believe you. Why wouldn't I believe you?" Su Yang said as he gently caressed her hands.

"I'm sorry for making you worried, Su Yang..." Su Liqing sighed a moment later. "This has never happened before."

"It's okay. I'm just relieved that it's nothing serious," Su Yang said.

Su Liqing lifted her head and stared at Su Yang in the eyes with a passionate gaze.

Su Yang, obviously, stared back at her.

A moment later, their faces approached each other and they began kissing intimately.

After many minutes of kissing, Su Yang suddenly said to her, "Liqing, if you ever want children, do not hesitate to ask. Although I used to refuse to have children no matter what, things have changed."

"Me...? Children?" Su Liqing looked at him with a dazed face.

"You already have two daughters and you still want more?" Su Liqing laughed softly.

"Actually, there's more than two. Although it didn't seem like it, Lian Li and Xie Xingfang are also pregnant with my child right now." Su Yang said.

"W-Wait a second... Xie Xingfang...? Her Highness...? When did you two..." Su Liqing looked at him with a shocked expression on her face.

"Haha... It's a long story so I'll tell you another time."

"So you already have 2 daughters right now with at least 2 more coming in the future, huh? Congratulations, Su Yang. I cannot believe you were just an Outer Court disciple not long ago." Su Liqing said to him with a beautiful smile.

And then she continued, "Though, if you don't mind me asking, why do you want so many children? According to my knowledge, most Dual Cultivators choose to not have any children with their partners— at least not until very late down the line. I know that you used to be an Immortal in your previous life, but you are barely 18 years old right now."

Su Yang showed a bittersweet smile and said, "My desire for children is probably due to something that happened in the past with my first wife."

"Your... first wife?" Su Liqing raised her eyebrows.

"Yes— this is way before I was a Dual Cultivator and way before I even had any reputation for myself. I was just like any ordinary young man who yearned for a partner back then, and when I found my first wife, I dedicated everything to her."

Su Yang closed his eyes to recall his memories— the beautiful face of his first wife.

"My first wife... Her name was Meiqi— Su Meiqi after she took my surname. And she has wanted a child with me ever since our first night together. However, no matter how many times we tried, she could not conceive. Because she used to be a powerful general who fought multiple wars, perhaps her inability to conceive was due to an injury she received during a battle, or maybe it's simply because she was born like that— we don't know."

"Anyway, even though it mattered a lot to Su Meiqi that we have a child, it really didn't matter to me, as my only purpose at the time was to make her happy by fulfilling her every desire. But alas, no matter what we tried, she was still unable to conceive— even until the day she died of old age."

"..." Su Liqing was speechless, as she didn't think he would have such a tragic backstory with his first wife.

Su Yang continued sometime later, "When I became a Dual Cultivator, the first thing I did was practice this cultivation technique that allowed me to have perfect control of my Yang Qi, which would allow me to i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.e a woman whenever I desired with 100% efficiency. Of course, that doesn't help those who do not have the ability to conceive like my first wife, so I started practicing medicine, which allowed me to fix that problem. However, despite spending many years perfecting both techniques, I never really got the chance to use those skills, as I never had any intentions to i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.e my partners."

"Of course, there had been countless women who wanted to bear my child, but I would always refuse, as I was never interested in that matter, not to mention that I have many enemies throughout the world, and having children would only give them more power over me."

"However, I have changed. This world— you girls have changed my mind. I want to start a family no matter what. After all, I cannot call myself a real man if I cannot fulfill my partners' desire because I am afraid of my enemies."

Su Yang then looked at Su Liqing in the eyes and said, "Therefore, if you also want a child with me, I will i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.e you as many times as you want."

After staring at Su Yang with a dazed expression for a long minute, Su Liqing suddenly spoke with a blushing face, "Su Yang... I want your child."

Su Yang then smiled and said, "Although I would begin now, we cannot make the others wait outside too long. Let's do this another time— tomorrow."

"Okay." Su Liqing nodded.

Chapter 721 Compatibility

After Su Yang's conversation with Su Liqing ended, the ladies waiting outside were finally told to come back inside.

"I am really sorry about what had just happened..." Su Liqing bowed to them afterward, and she said, "I hope it didn't cause any misunderstandings. If it did, let's try to clear it up now."

"As long as you're okay and we weren't the cause, it's fine," Wu Jingjing said to her with a smile.

"Anyways, now that everything's back to normal, let's introduce ourselves again?" Zhu Mengyi said.

And she continued, "I'm Zhu Mengyi, and this is Zhu Jiayi. I am also an Alchemist, so I know a thing or two about medicine. If you need any help, you can come to me. Of course, I am nothing compared to Su Yang."

"I am Wu Jingjing, and this is Wu Min. I belonged to a sword sect in the Holy Central Continent. Although I don't know anything about medicine, if you need someone to talk to, I am always here."

"My name is Lian Li, and I used to belong to the Lian Family in the Holy Central Continent. If you know the Xie Family of the Eastern Continent, my Lian Family is basically the Xie Family of the Holy Central Continent."

"It's a pleasure to meet all of you— My name used to be Lan Liqing, but after accepting Su Yang's Family Seal, I have decided to take his surname as my own, so I am currently Su Liqing."

"Can we call you Sister Liqing? You can also address us as such," Zhu Mengyi said to her.

"Yes," Su Liqing nodded.

"Great! Then let's talk about your first time with Su Yang! You were his first partner after his reincarnation, right?" Zhu Mengyi then asked her.

Hearing her question, Su Liqing smiled and said, "Okay, but this might take a while, so take a seat on the bed."

Once they were all seated on the bed, Su Liqing began recalling her background and how she met Su Yang from behind her own desk.

After Su Liqing finished her story, the three ladies began telling her their own story.

Three hours later, Su Yang and the three ladies left the Medicine Hall.

However, Su Yang said to Su Liqing before leaving, "Prepare yourself because I am going to knock you up the next time we see each other."

"Un." Su Liqing nodded with a rosy face.

After leaving the Medicine Hall, Su Yang brought the three ladies to the final family member in the Profound Blossom Sect— to Zhang Xiu Ying's living quarters.

"So this young girl is the last family member here, huh? She's much younger than the last two." Wu Jingjing looked at Zhang Xiu Ying with interest, as Zhang Xiu Ying appeared to be the most ordinary girl they've met. Of course, Zhang Xiu Ying was incredibly pretty, but other than her pretty face, they were unable to sense anything unique about her. In fact, she was so ordinary compared to the others that it became her uniqueness!

"Hello, Seniors, I am Zhang Xiu Ying, and I used to be an ordinary disciple from the Burning Lotus Sect before I found Su Yang," Zhang Xiu Ying politely introduced herself.

A few minutes later, once the three ladies introduced themselves, Zhang Xiu Ying covered her mouth in surprise and said, "Wow... I really feel out of place now..."

"Don't say that. You're unique in your own way, and since we all have Su Yang's Family Seal, we're all equal no matter what background we came from— isn't that right, Su Yang?" Wu Jingjing asked him.

"That's right. No matter where you came from or what status you held before, as long as you are in the family, I will treat you all equally," Su Yang confirmed.

After spending some time speaking with each other, Su Yang and the others left Zhang Xiu Ying's living quarters.

"You really surprised me just now, Su Yang." Lian Li suddenly said to him afterward. "I didn't think you'd accept someone so ordinary into your family. Ah— Don't get me wrong, I am not saying that's a bad thing. I am simply used to seeing you surrounded by impressive women."

Su Yang merely smiled and said, "It may be true that Zhang Xiu Ying is only an ordinary girl compared to you princesses, but it doesn't mean that she isn't pleasant to be around. What I consider the most important when considering who to accept into the family is our compatibility."

"No matter how beautiful one may be, if we are not compatible with each other, there's simply no way that I would accept them into my family and pretend I like her— that's simply impossible for me."

"Zhang Xiu Ying may be an ordinary girl, but I enjoy her company as much as I do with everyone else in the family, and that is the only thing that matters to me."

The ladies were speechless after hearing Su Yang's words, but they understood and agreed with everything he'd said.

"Anyway, I have a few more people that require introductions," Su Yang then said to them.

"Huh? I thought Zhang Xiu Ying was the last family member in this place," Wu Jingjing raised her eyebrows.

"Yes, that's true, but these people are very special. Although they may not be in the family right now, I already consider them as family."

And he continued, "You'll understand it when you meet them. In fact, one of them is actually a family member from the Divine Heavens."

The ladies looked at him with wide eyes, yet they were unable to comprehend the full meaning behind his words.

Sometime later, they arrived at the Yin Yang Pavilion.

However, before they could even enter the building, a peerless woman resembling a real goddess appeared before them with a perplexed expression on her face.

When the three ladies from the Holy Central Continent saw this goddess's unique features, mainly her silver hair and eyes that resembled the moon at night, their eyes widened with shock.

"You are... Immortal Fairy Su Yue!" Lian Li exclaimed.

Chapter 722 Real Daughters

"I-Immortal Fairy Su Yue!" Wu Jingjing and the other ladies unconsciously took a step back after seeing the frown on Qiuyue's face, as they recall how ruthless she could be whenever she's annoyed, and she looked incredibly annoyed right now.

"What is the meaning of this? Why are the three of you here?" Qiuyue asked them after a moment of silence.

"Well... Immortal Fairy Su Yue..."

"Don't call me that!" Qiuyue quickly interrupted.

The three ladies exchanged glances with each other, clearly in a bind.

"Why are you making things difficult for them, Qiuyue? You should already know why they're here..." Su Yang approached her and said.

"..."

Qiuyue looked at him for a second before turning to look at Wu Min and Zhu Jiayi.

"Don't tell me..." She looked at Su Yang again, her gaze filled with shock.

"That's right. They're my daughters. I impregnated them during our previous visit to the Holy Central Continent," Su Yang said to her.

"..."

Qiuyue immediately became speechless with a perplexed expression on her face.

Seeing this, Su Yang took this moment to introduce her to the other three goddesses.

"Although you may already know her as Immortal Fairy Su Yue, her real name is Qiuyue, and she's originally from the Divine Heavens like me," Su Yang said to them, and he continued, "However, due to some events in the Divine Heavens, she somehow managed to arrive in this place and has been here ever since."

"Umm... Immortal— Senior Qiuyue... It's a pleasure to finally see you..." Lian Li bowed to her.

"Although you may not recognize me, I am..."

"You're Emperor Lian's daughter, right? I remember you." Qiuyue quickly said to her. "There's no need for any introduction. I know every single one of you— Lian Li, Zhu Mengyi, and Wu Jingjing."

Qiuyue then turned to look at Su Yang and asked him, "Since they are here, it means they are going to follow us back to the Divine Heavens, right?"

"Un." Su Yang nodded.

Qiuyue turned to look at Su Yang's two daughters again before sighing inwardly, 'Father's real daughters, huh? If only I was also...'

"Do whatever you want," Qiuyue said a moment later before turning around and returning to the Yin Yang Pavilion and her room.

"T-That was surprising... I didn't expect Immortal Fairy— Senior Qiuyue to appear in front of us so suddenly..." Zhu Mengyi sighed in relief afterward.

"Yes. And it felt like she'd gotten more grumpy than before..." Wu Jingjing said with a smile on her face.

"Hahaha! Don't worry about her cold attitude— she does that when she's not able to express her emotions properly. You'll get used to her sooner or later." Su Yang laughed out loud.

"I can hear you, Su Yang!" Qiuyue's voice resounded from inside the building a second later.

Hearing her voice, Su Yang only laughed even louder.

"What's so funny, darling?"

A calm voice suddenly resounded, and another figure appeared before them.

The three ladies turned to look at this young lady who appeared to be around the same age as Su Yang, yet there was this otherworldly aura surrounding her that made her seem much more mature and mysterious, and it felt rather similar to Su Yang's aura.

"Lingxi." Su Yang looked at her.

"Hm?" However, right as she was prepared to speak, Tang Lingxi suddenly noticed the unique aura emitting from the three ladies, and then she saw the two cute babies in their arms.

"..."

Tang Lingxi immediately stopped her movements to stare at them with a gawking expression on her face, or more precisely, she was staring at the babies.

After a long moment of silence, she turned to look at Su Yang in a stiff movement.

"I-I don't want to believe this but... Are those two little creatures... Do they, by any chance, belong to you?" she asked him in a dumbfounded voice while pointing at them with trembling fingers.

"That's right. Do you like them? These little creatures?" he responded with a smile on his face.

"..."

However, Tang Lingxi did not immediately respond to him and instead turned to look at the babies again. She then approached Zhu Mengyi and Wu Jingjing, who quickly became nervous due to the profound aura surrounding Tang Lingxi.

Tang Lingxi stopped a moment later in front of Wu Jingjing, and she spoke, "Do you think I can hold onto her for a second?"

"Uhh..."

Wu Jingjing's eyes immediately shifted to Su Yang, who nodded his head with a smile on his face.

Seeing this, all of the doubt in her heart disappeared, and Wu Jingjing handed Wu Min to Tang Lingxi.

And to her surprise, Wu Min didn't cry despite being held by a stranger, as this was a first besides Su Yang.

"Haha... Look at this, darling. I am actually carrying your child— I didn't think this would happen even in ten thousand years!" Tang Lingxi laughed with a beautiful smile on her face while making an expression that even Su Yang hasn't seen before.

"I didn't know you liked children that much. In fact, I thought you hated them," Su Yang said to her a moment later.

"You are right, I despise children. However, since they are your children, this is an entirely different story," Tang Lingxi chuckled.

"Actually, I can say the same to you, darling. I didn't know you wanted children. I'm pretty sure I have heard you say something like 'I will never have children' before," Tang Lingxi said.

Su Yang chuckled at her words for a moment before speaking, "Yes, I did say something like that in the past, but you seem to have recalled only half of that sentence, and I actually said 'I will never have children in this life'."

Sometime later, Tang Lingxi handed Wu Min back to her mother Wu Jingjing.

And then she said, "I know this is a little bit late, but my name is Tang Lingxi. However, the 'me' you are seeing now is not the real 'me', as I am only borrowing this young lady's body using a forbidden pill."

"Huh?" The three ladies looked at Tang Lingxi with wide eyes, clearly shocked and speechless about her sudden revelation.

Chapter 723 Blossom Spring

Seeing their bewildered expressions, Tang Lingxi smiled and said, "I don't know whether Su Yang already told you or not, but I am someone from the Divine Heavens, and I also belong to the Su Family."

"And in order to reunite with Su Yang, I have consumed a forbidden pill called Soul Invading Pill, which allowed me to transmigrate my soul into another body and take control of their body temporarily. I know that sounds wrong, but you don't have to worry, as this body— whose original owner is named Hong Yu'er— has given me permission to use her body, and in return for borrowing her body, I am helping her cultivate."

After a moment of silence, Zhu Mengyi spoke, "Heavens... This Soul Invading Pill— what a terrifyingly powerful pill! I cannot even begin to imagine the terror it would cause if such a pill landed in the wrong hands..."

"It is indeed quite a scary pill, but that's why it's a forbidden pill, and it's not something anyone can just obtain, as it's heavily regulated and protected by the Alchemy God, who is also the only person in the world that can concoct such a pill, so you don't have to worry about it getting into the wrong hands."

"The Alchemy God...?" Zhu Mengyi wondered what kind of person this Alchemy God is.

"Anyway, enough about me. Tell me about yourselves— junior sisters who have accepted Su Yang's Family Seal."

The three ladies then proceeded to introduce themselves.

However, right as they were going to mention their backgrounds, Tang Lingxi said to them, "You don't have to tell me your backgrounds, I don't really care about it."

After all, as the princess of the Asura God Clan, no matter how impressive their backgrounds may be in this world, it wouldn't even qualify to be compared to the Asura God Clan. Furthermore, one's background did not matter in the Su Family, so it wouldn't have mattered regardless.

"Instead of your background, I want to hear about your experiences with Su Yang. But we should go somewhere more comfortable. Follow me to my room," Tang Lingxi said to them as she entered the Ying Yang Pavilion.

"I guess it's your room now," Su Yang shook his head with a smile on his face.

"Anyway, you girls can go ahead without me. I have something else to do right now."

"Okay." They nodded before leaving him alone.

Once the ladies went inside the Yin Yang Pavilion, Su Yang turned around and began making his way back to the Medicine Hall.

"Su Yang? Did you forget something?" The disciples inside the Medicine Hall were puzzled to see him return so quickly.

"Something like that," he nodded.

"If you're here for Master, she just left the building not long ago," one of the disciples said to him.

"Hm? Where did she go?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows, as Su Liqing rarely leaves the Medicine Hall.

"Master went to the Blossom Spring to clean herself. She should be back in an hour," said the disciples.

"Blossom Spring? This is my first time hearing of this place." Su Yang said with a slightly surprised expression. How come he's never heard of this place before?

"Ah, that's probably because only female sect elders are allowed to go there, and it's located in a secure area somewhere on the Blossom Mountain a few miles outside our sect, so not many people know about it. We only know about it because our Master goes there once a month to bathe in the spring that is also said to cleanse impurities within one's body."

"Cleanse one's impurities?" Su Yang asked the disciples a moment later, "Where can I find this Blossom Mountain?"

"I'm not exactly sure about its exact location, but it should be towards the south."

"Thank you," Su Yang said to them before leaving the Medicine Hall.

Once Su Yang left, the disciples sighed, "Haaaa... It must be nice to have so much of Su Yang's attention. If only I was in the Master's shoes."

"Keep dreaming junior sister. Su Yang is too much for us. We're already immensely lucky to get to cultivate with him. Don't push your luck too much."

"What's wrong with dreaming? It's called dreaming for a reason!"

While the disciples chatted with each other, Su Yang flew towards the south even after he left the sect.

A few miles later, Su Yang could see a small but beautiful mountain that was filled with blossom trees, and at the end of the mountain, there was a small spring that was also covered in blossom petals that had fallen from the large blossom tree that was located right next to the spring, resembling the Celestial Pond.

Once Su Yang got closer to the spring, he was able to see Su Liqing's beautiful figure bathing in the Blossom Spring with her eyes closed, and he decided to approach her.

Meanwhile, Su Liqing was completely relaxed and unaware of Su Yang's presence.

"I never knew such a beautiful place existed until today," Su Yang's voice suddenly resounded, startling Su Liqing.

"S-Su Yang?! What are you doing here? You nearly gave me a heart attack!" Su Liqing sighed in relief after realizing that it was him.

"I'm sorry if I scared you just now. As for what I am doing here... have you already forgotten what I said to you not long ago?" Su Yang said to her with a smile on his face as he descended onto the ground beside the spring.

"Eh? But you said tomorrow... That's why I am preparing myself right now." Su Liqing said with a dazed expression on her face.

"I know, but I cannot wait, so here I am," he said, still with a smile on his face. "Or are you going to keep me waiting until tomorrow?"

Su Liqing chuckled in a defeated voice before nodding her head, "Can you at least wait until I clean my body? Of course, you can join me if you want."

"I wouldn't refuse such an offer even if it's the last thing I do," Su Yang said, and he removed his clothes before entering the Blossom Spring with Su Liqing.

Chapter 724 Impregnating Su Liqing

After entering the spring, Su Yang sat beside Su Liqing and placed his arm around her shoulders before pulling her towards his body.

"Su Yang, you know... I never thought I would be having a child with you so soon," Su Liqing suddenly said.

"I knew it was going to happen one day, but I never really thought about it until I saw your daughter with Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi. It was as though something within me had awakened."

"Trust me, I know that feeling very well. If you went to the past and told me that I would be willingly impregnating my partners, I would simply laugh at you," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"Once we return to the Divine Heavens, I can already imagine what might happen once the others see our child."

"The more the merrier, right?" Su Liqing laughed gracefully.

After a moment of silence, Su Liqing spoke again, "Su Yang, what are you going to do once we go to the Divine Heavens?"

Su Yang closed his eyes for a moment before speaking, "I am... going to take care of a few businesses and fulfill a few promises that had been delayed for 2,000 years due to my reincarnation, and once everything is taken care of, I am going to settle down somewhere with all of you and live the rest of our life in peace."

"I am going to create a utopia— a paradise for all of us and our children."

"A paradise, huh? I am looking forward to it," Su Liqing said with a gentle smile on her face as she imagined such a lifestyle with Su Yang and their child.

After spending many minutes submerged in the refreshing water, Su Liqing turned to look at Su Yang and spoke with a longing gaze, "Su Yang... I am ready... Can you 'knock me up'?"

Su Yang smiled at her words and nodded, "As you wish."

Su Liqing then closed her eyes and lifted her head slightly, gesturing her desires.

Seeing this, Su Yang kissed her on the lips, and their lips remained on each other for many minutes.

"Haaa... haaa..."

Su Liqing was already breathing heavily before they even began the real thing.

A few moments later, she stood up, turned around, and bent forward towards the edge of the spring, shoving her flawless buttocks in the air and towards Su Yang.

"Go ahead, Su Yang..." she said to him with a red face.

Su Yang nodded, and he approached her with his little brother already filled with energy and rock hard.

The next moment, Su Yang inserted his dragon into Su Liqing's already slippery cave, entering her body with ease.

"Aahh~"

Su Liqing moaned softly as her hole stretched into a wide circle.

Once the entire rod was inside Su Liqing's body, Su Yang began moving his hips, pounding her tight cave with his stiff rod and her buttocks at the same time with his body.

The water in the spring splashed loudly, but they were easily masked by the sound of Su Liqing's intense moaning.

After pounding Su Liqing for a few minutes, Su Yang suddenly bent his body over Su Liqing's back and grabbed her breasts from behind.

"Ahhh~!"

Su Liqing's moaning increased as Su Yang massaged her breasts and nipples while pounding her hole simultaneously.

Many minutes later, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into her hole, filling every nook and cranny inside.

"Yes~ Impregnate me, Su Yang!" Su Liqing moaned with passion, feeling incredibly full from the ejaculation.

However, Su Yang didn't stop there and refused to remove his meatstick from her cave afterward. A few moments later, he began moving his hips again, pounding Su Liqing's body again.

The two of them continued to cultivate for many hours in different positions with Su Yang releasing his Yang Qi into Su Liqing's body multiple times throughout their time together, overfilling her hole every time.

By the time they finished cultivating, it was already dark outside with the starry night looming over the world.

"After being filled by your Yang Qi so many times, I will definitely get pregnant, right?" Su Liqing asked him as they gazed at the stars together from the spring.

Su Yang nodded and said, "That's right. Unless you are naturally incapable of conceiving like my first wife, then you'll definitely become a mother. However, even if you are incapable of conceiving, unlike previously, we are not hopeless, as I have multiple ways of fixing such problems."

After resting in the Blossom Spring for an hour, Su Yang carried Su Liqing back to the Profound Blossom Sect as though she was a princess.

Once they returned to the Medicine Hall, Su Liqing asked him, "Su Yang, do you think you can stay here tonight?"

"Of course," Su Yang nodded.

And thus, Su Yang spent the rest of the night with Su Liqing in her room, even cultivating with her a few more times after Su Liqing was unable to sleep due to the excitement of becoming a mother.

The following day, Su Yang left the Medicine Hall whilst Su Liqing slept from exhaustion after cultivating for the entire night without much rest.

"Eh? You stayed here the entire night?" The disciples in the Medicine Hall were dumbfounded to see Su Yang leaving their Master's room so early in the morning, as none of them witnessed Su Yang and Su Liqing returning yesterday.

"Yes. And your Master might need to rest for today, so don't bother her unless necessary," Su Yang said to them.

"We understand, Su Yang!" The disciples nodded.

After leaving the Medicine Hall, Su Yang returned to the Yin Yang Pavilion.

As he approached the building, he noticed a beautiful figure sitting at the entrance with a seemingly exhausted expression on her face.

"Liangyu? Are you okay? What are you doing sitting there alone and looking all tired?" Su Yang approached her with a smile on his face.

"Su Yang..." Qin Liangyu looked at Su Yang with a bittersweet smile on her face, "I am okay. I am just a little tired as Xiao Rong's adviser."

Chapter 725 Let Her Watch

"Xiao Rong? Did something happen to her?" Su Yang asked with raised eyebrows.

"No, there's nothing wrong. I just didn't think it would take this long to teach her about 'being mature'," Qin Liangyu said.

Su Yang laughed out loud after hearing her words, and he said, "Well, she's a magical beast that never had a proper interaction with humans until we met."

"Furthermore, Ghost Cats, in general, are slow learners when it comes to emotions and whatnot, not to mention their Ancestors, Phantom Cats. While she may be incredibly powerful when it comes to spiritual techniques and a fast learner for other things, Xiao Rong is not very good with emotions— kind of like Qiuyue."

"If you can't take it anymore, you can simply just quit. Although it's okay to be taught by others about maturity, Xiao Rong won't understand the essence and true meaning behind maturity, so even if she

acts mature on the outside, she's still a mere child in her heart, and that's not something that can really be taught by others."

Qin Liangyu nodded and said, "I know, but I cannot give up on her now— not after putting so much effort into it! I am going to make sure Xiao Rong becomes a proper young lady!"

Seeing Qin Liangyu's resolution that resembled a mother wanting her child to grow up properly, Su Yang said with a smile, "Since you are working so hard, do you want me to help you relax a bit? It's been a while since we last cultivated, after all."

Qin Liangyu's eyes flashed with excitement after hearing his words, and she quickly nodded, "Okay!"

Sometime later, Qin Liangyu followed Su Yang into the Yin Yang Pavilion.

"Xiao Rong should still be in my room right now..." Qin Liangyu suddenly said to him.

"That's fine. There are plenty of empty rooms in this building," Su Yang responded.

A few minutes later, they entered one of the unoccupied rooms and locked the doors.

Su Yang then pulled Qin Liangyu to the bed and began kissing her.

"Mmm..."

Su Yang's hands roamed under Qin Liangyu's clothes as they kissed.

Sometime later, Qin Liangyu removed her clothes and tossed them to the side of the bed before spreading her legs so Su Yang could have full access.

With Qin Liangyu's closed slit in his view, Su Yang quickly kneeled beside the bed and began eating her pink meat.

"Mmmm~"

"Aaahn~!"

"Ooooh~"

Qin Liangyu moaned softly as Su Yang feasted on her body.

Once Qin Liangyu's lower lips were fully soaking wet, Su Yang removed his clothes and prepared to insert his meatstick into her body.

After rubbing his stiff rod between her slit for a few moments, Su Yang penetrated her small hole.

"Aaaah!" Qin Liangyu clutched the bedsheets as Su Yang's large rod stretched the deepest parts of her cave.

"Are you ready?" Su Yang asked her a moment later.

Qin Liangyu nodded her head with a passionate gaze.

"Then here I—"

However, right as Su Yang moved his hips, his movements immediately stopped.

"What's the matter, Su Yang?" Qin Liangyu asked him after seeing this.

"Well..." Su Yang turned his head around, and to his surprise, a little girl with peerless facial features was standing by the window.

"X-Xiao Rong?!" Qin Liangyu's eyes widened with surprise when she noticed Xiao Rong's presence, and she immediately grabbed a blanket to cover herself, acting almost like a wife getting caught in the act by someone she didn't want to find out.

"How long have you been there, Xiao Rong?" Su Yang asked her with a bittersweet smile on his face.

"Since Master began licking Sister Liangyu's body," Xiao Rong responded with a calm expression on her face.

'That long? Phantom Cats are really scary with their ability to hide their presence flawlessly.' Su Yang shook his head inwardly.

"Well? What do you want?" Su Yang then asked her.

Xiao Rong then shook her head in response, and then she said, "Nothing."

Su Yang nearly facepalmed at her response, and he said, "Then why are you here? You know you shouldn't intrude on others when they are clearly not trying to be disturbed."

However, Xiao Rong merely tilted her head while looking puzzled at his words.

'Ah... I forgot... Ghost Cats are also incapable of reading the mood...' Su Yang sighed inwardly.

After a moment of silence, Su Yang returned to looking at Qin Liangyu and said to her, "It's pointless trying to explain our situation to her, so how about we just continue and let her watch?"

"Eh?" Qin Liangyu looked at him with wide eyes, and then she turned to look at Xiao Rong, who was staring at them intensively, looking exactly like a curious cat.

"She'll learn about it sooner or later, and as I said before, there are some things that cannot be taught," Su Yang continued a moment later, "Xiao Rong's bloodlines are actually incredibly lustful creatures when awakened, but they usually live a pure life. However, if she follows me, she will eventually awaken. Once that happens, even I might have trouble satisfying her lust in my current state."

"Then we should avoid exposing her to these kinds of situations even more!" Qin Liangyu said with a dazed face.

"No, her lust won't awaken so quickly, or else her bloodline would wreak havoc in the Divine Heavens. By the time she awakens her lust, I'll be prepared."

"..."

After pondering for a moment, Qin Liangyu nodded with a resolute expression on her face, and she said, "This is also part of being mature, so I might as well consider this as a lesson, too."

Qin Liangyu then turned to look at Xiao Rong and continued, "Xiao Rong, I am going to give you another lesson now. You can even call this the definition of becoming mature since this is when most 'young ladies' become a 'woman'!"

"Okay." Xiao Rong nodded with enthusiasm, and she took a seat by the bed before staring at them intently, patiently waiting for them to continue.

Chapter 726: Watching Intensely

"Are you ready?" Su Yang asked Qin Liangyu who was still laying on the bed with the blankets covering her body.

"Yes... I am." Qin Liangyu nodded her head before removing the cover, allowing Xiao Rong to see her naked body.

"She won't get a good view like this so let's switch positions."

Su Yang then took a seat on the bed with his legs spread and his dragon raging towards the ceiling.

When Xiao Rong saw this and recalled the white liquid she briefly tasted last time, she began licking her lips like a cat before food.

"You have to sit still, Xiao Rong, or you can't stay in here and watch," Su Yang said to her.

"Yes, Master." Xiao Rong nodded.

Su Yang then looked at Qin Liangyu and said to her, "Come, stand in front of me with your back facing me."

Qin Liangyu nodded before getting off the bed and standing in front of Su Yang.

Once Qin Liangyu's round buttocks were directly in front of his face, Su Yang grabbed her by the hips and pulled her body towards his body until she was sitting on his lap.

"Sit on me and spread your legs," Su Yang said.

A moment later, Qin Liangyu sat on his lap with her legs spread wide open, revealing everything to Xiao Rong.

"Now she can see everything," Su Yang chuckled as he lifted Qin Liangyu's body slightly and inserted his rod into her cave.

"Aaah~!" Qin Liangyu moaned softly after feeling his rod knock on the deepest part of her cave.

A few moments later, Su Yang grabbed Qin Liangyu's soft breasts from behind and began massaging them.

"Mmm~"

Qin Liangyu's spread cave quickly began drooling with Yin Qi.

Su Yang then used his spiritual energy to move Qin Liangyu's body, lifting her body until only his tip remained in her tight cave before pulling her body back down, inserting his meatstick deep into her cave again.

"Aaaaaah~!"

Qin Liangyu moaned loudly as an indescribable feeling of pleasure coursed through her body like a thousand electric snakes.

"Aah~!"

"Aaaaaahn~"

"Oooh~!"

Qin Liangyu continued to fill the room with her passionate voice as Su Yang pounded her body upwards nonstop.

Meanwhile, Xiao Rong glared intensely at Qin Liangyu's spread slit and Su Yang's meatstick that was constantly going in and out of Qin Liangyu's pink cave.

Although she didn't understand what they were doing or why they were doing it, Xiao Rong could sense the pleasure in Qin Liangyu's moaning voice and see pure satisfaction on her lustful face.

Xiao Rong suddenly moved her hands to touch her heart, which was beating a little faster than normal, but she couldn't understand why.

After watching for a little bit longer, Xiao Rong noticed that her mouth was salivating more than usual, and her body temperature was slowly heating up.

These phenomenons puzzled Xiao Rong, who didn't understand the concept of lust or desire, only that she had felt this sensation before— when Su Yang licked her body that one time.

"Master..." Xiao Rong mumbled in a low voice, and her hands gradually moved closer to the area between her legs.

"Hm?" As Su Yang cultivated with Qin Liangyu, he noticed Xiao Rong's strange movements, and he decided to watch her while he continued to pleasure Qin Liangyu.

"Haa... haaa..."

Xiao Rong breathed heavily as she recalled the sensation that tickled her body when Su Yang licked her, and her hands reached the area between her legs. However, since she did not know how to pleasure herself, she began touching herself randomly until she found the right spot— the slightly wet slit between her legs.

The moment her fingers touched the warm and slippery area inside her slit, Xiao Rong felt a tingling sensation course through her body.

After experiencing this pleasant sensation, Xiao Rong continued to rub her own slit and indulged herself in pleasure, even ignoring Su Yang and Qin Liangyu's cultivation after a while.

"Aaahh..."

A soft moan escaped Xiao Rong's small mouth.

"Su Yang..." Qin Liangyu finally noticed what Xiao Rong was doing after hearing this soft moan that didn't come from herself.

"Yes, she's learning." Su Yang chuckled, and he continued, "Let's not bother her and focus on ourselves."

"Okay," Qin Liangyu nodded.

"By the way, have you decided yet? Although there's still a year before I leave, have you decided to truly follow me?" Su Yang suddenly asked her as he pounded her tight and slippery hole.

"Yes—Ahhh~! I have—Ahhh! I have decided that... I want to be with you forever, Su Yang... Aaaaah~!"

"Good! Then accept my Family Seal and officially become my woman, Qin Liangyu!" Su Yang released his Yang Qi inside Qin Liangyu's hole, filling it to the brim.

"Family Seal...?" Qin Liangyu stared at the symbol that had suddenly appeared slightly below her belly button.

"Yes. Family Seals are..."

Su Yang proceeded to explain to her the meaning being the Family Seal and the rules of the Su Family.

"Do you accept?" Su Yang asked her afterward.

"I accept." Qin Liangyu nodded with a beautiful smile on her face.

"Good, then here's my blood to make it official."

Su Yang smeared a drop of his blood on the Family Seal, activating it.

"Welcome to the family, Liangyu," Su Yang said to her.

"Thank you for accepting someone like me, Su Yang..." Qin Liangyu laid on his body to rest.

Meanwhile, Xiao Rong continued to pleasure herself on the chair with her legs spread wide open and her arms working hard.

Seeing this, Su Yang shook his head with a smile.

"You can rest. I am going to take care of her," he said as he laid Qin Liangyu on the bed.

"What are you going to do to her?" she asked him.

"At this rate, she'll continue pleasing herself until she's satisfied, which might take a while, so I am going to do it for her." Su Yang said as he went to pick up his clothes.

Chapter 727 Teaching Xiao Rong About Lus

After putting on his clothes, Su Yang approached Xiao Rong before picking her up from the chair and carrying her towards the bed.

"Master... I feel... weird... and hot..." Xiao Rong looked at him with a slightly dazed look on her face.

"I know... That is what you call lust." Su Yang said as he sat down on the bed and laid Xiao Rong's small body over his lap.

"Lust...?" Xiao Rong mumbled in a puzzled voice.

"Yes. Although you may not understand it now, you'll eventually understand. The moment you understand the meaning of lust, you'll be mature enough to finally taste my Yang Qi."

Su Yang said to her as she removed her clothes, revealing her peerless but petite figure.

"In order to satisfy that lust, I am going to touch you now."

Su Yang then moved his hands towards Xiao Rong's small and bare kitty before rubbing the pink area between her slit with one of his fingers.

"Aaaah..." Xiao Rong moaned as her petite body trembled with delight.

"Do you feel it? That is what you call satisfaction— or pleasure. If you want to satisfy your lust, you'll need to feel pleasure to release the lust in your body." Su Yang explained to her like it was a lecture as his fingers continued to rub her small kitty.

"Then Master... was pleasing... Sister Liangyu... before?" Xiao Rong asked him.

"That's right." Su Yang nodded.

A few moments later, Xiao Rong spoke in a low voice whilst tightly grabbing onto Su Yang's robes with her small hands, "Master... I can feel something coming...!"

"That's a normal reaction to feeling pleasure. Don't resist it and let it flow." Su Yang said as he moved his fingers a little quicker.

"Aaah~! It's coming! It's coming out, Master!"

Xiao Rong's body trembled a few seconds later, and her kitty gushed with Yin Qi the next moment.

"Wow... Xiao Rong's Yin Qi... they're steaming!" Qin Liangyu exclaimed in a surprised voice after seeing the crystalized mist coming from Xiao Rong's Yin Qi.

"As expected of a virgin at the Ancient Realm, her Yin Qi is on another level. It's truly unfortunate that I cannot absorb it to cultivate," Su Yang sighed with a regretful expression on his face as he stared at Xiao Rong's Yin Qi, thinking how wasteful it was to just leave it like that.

"How do you feel now, Xiao Rong?" Su Yang asked her after Xiao Rong climaxed for the first time.

"I want more... Master, I want you to touch me more..." Xiao Rong stared at him in the eyes with a longing gaze.

"Just for today, okay?" Su Yang said.

"Un!" She nodded.

A moment later, Su Yang continued to rub Xiao Rong's little kitty, even slipping a single finger inside her tiny hole.

'Wow, it's really tight in here...'

Although Su Yang had already expected her cave to be small due to her petite body, he didn't expect it to be so small that he could only fit two fingers inside.

"Aaaah..."

"Aaaaaahn~"

"Mmmm..."

Xiao Rong moaned softly as Su Yang fingerfucked her wet cave with a single finger whilst his thumb massaged the small pink pearl between her slit simultaneously.

About an hour later, Su Yang finally stopped touching Xiao Rong's kitty, as she was already on the verge of losing consciousness from experiencing too much pleasure and climaxing too many times.

"Are you satisfied now, Xiao Rong?" Su Yang asked her afterward.

"Yes... Master..." Xiao Rong nodded with a red face and her petite body filled with sweat.

"Good." Su Yang said as he laid her on the bed beside Qin Liangyu.

"I am going to return to my own room now. Call me if you need anything." Su Yang said to Qin Liangyu.

"Okay."

"Wait... Master..." Xiao Rong suddenly called for him.

"What's the matter?" Su Yang looked at her, who was staring at him with an expression she has never expressed before.

"If I become mature, will I be able to do this with Master again?" she asked him.

Su Yang nodded with a smile on his face, "I can do even more things with you if you want— things that will feel many times better than what you experienced today."

Once Su Yang left the room, Xiao Rong turned to look at Qin Liangyu with a silent gaze.

Seeing this, Qin Liangyu smiled and said, "Don't worry, Xiao Rong. I won't stop until you are truly mature, and what you experienced today is a huge step towards maturity!"

"Really?"

"Really really!" Qin Liangyu nodded with a smile on her face.

"Here, I can even promise you with a pinky swear!" Qin Liangyu held out her pinky and said.

"Pinky swear?" Xiao Rong raised her eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

"Yes, you do this if you make a promise to another person, and if you break the promise, you'll have to swallow a thousand needles!" Qin Liangyu said to her.

Xiao Rong nodded her head, and Qin Liangyu swore that she'll help Xiao Rong become a mature woman with a pinky swear.

Meanwhile, Su Yang returned to his own room with a dejected feeling.

'Haaaa... In order to absorb Xiao Rong's Pure Yin Essence, I'll need to reach the Divine Saint Realm...' Su Yang sighed inwardly.

Of course, he can take Xiao Rong's maiden status right now without absorbing her Pure Yin Essence, but that would be a massive waste of resources since Xiao Rong's Pure Yin Essence is incredibly rare and would greatly boost his cultivation.

A few minutes later, Su Yang returned to his room, where Tang Lingxi and the other three girls were still talking to each other.

"Welcome back, darling." Tang Lingxi said to him, and then she continued in a surprised voice, "Oh? Did you do something to Xiao Rong? I can sense her powerful Yin Qi all over your body."

"Yes, it's a long story, but I had to teach her a little about pleasure and lust," Su Yang responded with a bittersweet smile on his face.

Chapter 728 How He Obtained the Sword Emperor Title

"Teaching Xiao Rong about lust and pleasure? A Phantom Cat?" Tang Lingxi covered her mouth in shock, and she continued a moment later, "I know you are very confident in your abilities, but do you really think you can handle someone like Xiao Rong in your current state? I don't think I need to tell you this, but you should be aware of Xiao Rong's bloodline, right? Or more specifically, what happens when she awakens."

"Don't you think it's a little too early to teach Xiao Rong about lust?"

Su Yang nodded his head and said, "Yes, I am well aware of what will happen when Xiao Rong awakens her lustful state. However, she won't awaken so quickly, and once I consume the Hellfire Seed, I will be more than capable of handling her."

"Xiao Rong? Phantom Cat? Who's that?" Wu Jingjing asked after listening to their conversation, as this is her first time hearing this name.

Tang Lingxi then said, "Phantom Cats are a very rare species even in the Divine Heavens that are known as the ancestors of Ghost Cats, and Ghost Cats are extremely powerful creatures that are known to be unrivaled in terms of their speed. Meanwhile, Phantom Cats are not only fast but they can also use spiritual attacks. A single one of them could wreak havoc in the Divine Heavens, yet Su Yang somehow managed to tame one of them in this small world."

"As for Xiao Rong, that's the Phantom Cat in her human form. Once magical beasts reach a certain cultivation level, they have the ability to transform into humans with all of our internal organs and whatnot."

After Tang Lingxi's explanation, the three ladies immediately felt like meeting this Phantom Cat, as none of them have ever seen a magical beast in a human form before.

"By the way, this Phantom Cat is currently the strongest existence in this world, surpassing even Qiuyue in cultivation." Tang Lingxi suddenly said.

"The strongest in this world? Do you think we can meet this Xiao Rong?" Zhu Mengyi asked with her eyes flickering in excitement.

"She's a little exhausted after my lesson, but with her cultivation base, she should recover in a few hours. I'll summon her then so you can meet her," Su Yang said to them.

"Okay!"

A moment later, Su Yang continued to speak, "By the way, I have also given Qin Liangyu my Family Seal just now."

"Qin Liangyu? I guess she couldn't wait any longer and wanted to make it official as soon as possible," Tang Lingxi chuckled.

"Qin Liangyu?" The three ladies raised their eyebrows again, as this is another name they are not familiar with.

Seeing this, Su Yang explained to them, "Qin Liangyu is someone from the Southern Continent— you'll meet her later along with Xiao Rong."

"You have been to the Southern Continent too?" Lian Li raised her eyebrows, and then she asked, "Then have you gone to the Western or Northern Continent before?"

"No, I haven't," he shook his head. "I don't have any business there so I won't even bother."

"Aren't you at least curious though? I have always been curious about the other Continents," Lian Li then said.

"If you want, I can fly you around the other continents once I am available," Su Yang said.

"Really?" Lian Li looked at him with a bright smile on her beautiful face.

"The two of you can have fun— I am going to stay here with Wu Min," Wu Jingjing said.

"Me, too. It's not easy traveling with a baby," Zhu Mengyi sighed.

"Anyway, I was just telling them about the Divine Heavens. Care to join us, darling? Maybe you can share some of your experience?" Tang Lingxi asked him a moment later.

"My experience, huh?" Su Yang grabbed a chair and sat down with a pondering expression.

"Well? What do you want to know?"

Lian Li immediately raised her hands and said, "I want to know more about your title 'Spirit Heaven's Sword Emperor'! How did you obtain such a title?"

"Hmm..." Su Yang closed his eyes to think for a minute before speaking, "Well, I kind of cultivated with the previous Sword Emperor's wife which resulted in a deathmatch with the guy. After defeating him, I got his title of Sword Emperor."

"Eh?"

Lian Li and the other ladies looked at him with their eyes wide with shock. Only Tang Lingxi was chuckling from the story behind his title, as she already knew about it.

"As for the Spirit Heaven part— because it took place in the Spirit Heaven, one of the four Divine Heavens," Su Yang added.

"W-What about your journey as a swordmaster? Why did you choose the sword in the first place?" Lian Li asked a few moments later.

"Because my first love— my first wife who was a general wielded a sword in her battles, and I looked up to her," Su Yang said with a warm smile on his face as he recalled Su Meiqi's heroic figure after the wars she fought.

"Once I began training with the sword, I realized just how much I liked its style, so I continued to practice it until I reached the peak with it."

"The peak... so you were the strongest swordmaster in your previous life?" Lian Li asked him.

"Haha... Far from it," Su Yang shook his head, and he said, "While my techniques were definitely at the peak during my era, there are many more swordmasters out there who are more powerful than me, as I have stopped practicing the sword to become a Dual Cultivator."

"Perhaps if I didn't stop training with a sword, I might have become the strongest swordmaster out there and obtained the title of Sword God."

"Sword God..." Lian Li mumbled, and she asked, "Do you regret abandoning the sword path?"

Su Yang laughed for a moment before shaking his head, "Regrets? I have none! If I didn't become a Dual Cultivator, I wouldn't have met any of you or my other partners! If I could go back in time and redo everything, I would actually become a Dual Cultivator again but even earlier in my life!"

Chapter 729 Recalling an Incident

After spending a few hours talking about his own background and past, Su Yang said, "You want to meet with Xiao Rong, right? She should have recovered by now, so I'll call her over."

Hearing his words, the three ladies immediately nodded their heads, and they waited patiently for Xiao Rong to appear before them.

"Xiao Rong, come over here to my room, and bring Liangyu with you." Su Yang spoke to Xiao Rong in his head.

Sometime later, Qin Liangyu knocked on the door to his room and spoke from the outside, "Su Yang? Did you call me here?"

"Yes. Come inside. I want to introduce you." Su Yang said to her.

Qin Liangyu opened the door the next moment, and she walked inside with a young girl who resembled Qiuyue standing behind her.

"Eh? That looks like..."

The three ladies were shocked after seeing Xiao Rong's appearance that resembled Qiuyue— silver eyes and silver hair.

"Liangyu, these three ladies are from the Holy Central Continent, and they are also part of the family." Su Yang said, and they began introducing themselves the next moment.

"Hello! I am Zhu Mengyi, and this is Zhu Jiayi."

"I am Wu Jingjing, and this is Wu Min."

"My name is Lian Li."

Qin Liangyu gave them a courteous bow before speaking, "Hello, Seniors, I am called Qin Liangyu, and I came from the Southern Continent."

"By the way..." Qin Liangyu then turned to look at the babies and spoke in a perplexed voice, "Are the babies..."

"Yes, they're mine." Su Yang responded with a smile.

"Oh..." Qin Liangyu mumbled in a dazed voice.

"Does everyone in the Southern Continent have that complexion? It's very unique and pretty," Wu Jingjing asked Qin Liangyu a moment later.

"No, not everyone, but a vast majority of the people do." Qin Liangyu said.

"I see..." Wu Jingjing nodded.

Sometime later, Su Yang said, "Xiao Rong, can you introduce yourself?"

"Introduce myself..." Xiao Rong looked at Qin Liangyu who had a smile on her face.

"Just like how I taught you, Xiao Rong."

Xiao Rong nodded and stepped forward. She then bowed to them just like Qin Liangyu had and said, "Hello, I am Xiao Rong."

"Oh, I'm impressed." Su Yang smiled with an approving look on his face after seeing Xiao Rong's courteous bow.

And then he said, "Can you transform into your beast form for a moment? They would like to see it."

Xiao Rong nodded, and she returned to her Phantom Cat form a few seconds later.

"Wow! That's a Phantom Cat? What a phenomenal existence!" Zhu Mengyi's eyes flickered with excitement after seeing Xiao Rong's ghostly appearance.

"Waaa! Waaah!"

While everyone there admired Xiao Rong's otherworldly appearance, Wu Min and Zhu Jiayi suddenly began making noises with their arms extended and their tiny hands in a grasping motion, almost like they wanted to hold Xiao Rong.

"Oh? I think the babies want to play with you. Is that okay?" Wu Jingjing asked Xiao Rong.

However, Xiao Rong did not understand the concept of playing with babies and turned to look at Su Yang with a puzzled look on her face.

Su Yang then said with a smile, "Just let them touch you."

Xiao Rong nodded and flew in front of the babies.

Once Xiao Rong was within their reach, the babies immediately began touching Xiao Rong all over her body, especially her tail that resembled flickering flames.

"Waaa! Waaah!"

Wu Min and Zhu Jiayi appeared to be extremely happy with Xiao Rong.

Seeing this, Wu Jingjing chuckled, "Looks like they really like Xiao Rong."

"They say children are naturally attracted to animals, especially the smaller ones," said Zhu Mengyi with a smile on her face.

Meanwhile, Xiao Rong silently stared at the two small creatures that were only slightly larger than herself, seemingly puzzled by the familiar smell coming from them.

Of course, Xiao Rong did not understand the concepts of babies just yet, so she didn't know why she could smell Su Yang's scent from them.

Lian Li, on the other hand, held a pondering expression on her face.

"Is there something wrong, Lian Li?" Wu Jingjing asked her after noticing her expression.

Lian Li shook her head and said, "No... Seeing Xiao Rong's appearance made me recall something that happened in the Holy Central Continent last year."

"Eh?" They looked at her with raised eyebrows.

"Do you remember the incident when the Golden Lion Academy was nearly destroyed last year? The description of the culprit closely resembles Xiao Rong's appearance. A little girl with silver hair and silver eyes."

"I remember. It was such a massive event that shook the entire continent for many months," Zhu Mengyi said.

"Is the Patriarch of the Golden Lion Academy still missing? I haven't heard any news of him for almost a year now," Wu Jingjing asked.

"My family has been investigating Patriarch Gold's disappearance for a while, but we're still unable to find his location, so it's still a mystery. However, we believe he crossed the Jade Sea to travel somewhere— perhaps to another Continent."

After listening to the ladies' conversation, Su Yang spoke with a smile on his face, "If you're looking for the Sect Master of the Golden Lion Academy, you don't need to anymore since I know where he is."

"Eh? Really? You know where Patriarch Gold is? Where?" Lian Li asked him with a surprised face.

Su Yang then lifted his arm before pointing his finger towards the ground.

However, the ladies could not comprehend his gesture, so Su Yang continued, "He's currently in the Jade Sea— the seafloor to be exact."

"What?! Does this mean he's dead?! How did that happen?!" Lian Li exclaimed in a shocked voice.

"No, he's not dead, but he might as well be. As for how he got there—" Su Yang pointed at himself with a smile on his face. "I placed him there."

"..."

Lian Li looked at him with a gawking expression. What on earth happened between him and Patriarch Gold?

Chapter 730 Solving Patriarch Gold's Disappearance

Seeing Lian Li's dumbfounded face, Su Yang explained, "It's a long story, but what happened was— that man traveled to the Eastern Continent from the Holy Central Continent just so he could covet my woman— Xie Xingfang. He even brought along with him a few Heavenly Spirit Realm and Earth Spirit Realm Cultivators so they can have some fun in the Eastern Continent, so I erased them all besides their leader, whom I pinned to the seafloor in the Jade Sea for all eternity until he dies naturally."

"What?! To think Patriarch Gold had such intentions! The audacity!" Zhu Mengyi exclaimed in an angry voice, and she continued, "He deserved everything that happened to him!"

"I never liked Patriarch Gold as well, as he would always stare at me with a lustful gaze whenever we meet. Fortunately for me, my father is the Sect Master of the Holy Sword Academy, so I didn't have to deal with any sexual harassment from that guy," Wu Jingjing sighed.

"Hmm.. Although the mystery behind Patriarch Gold's disappearance is now solved, neither my family nor the Holy Central Continent knows about it, and they will continue to investigate the situation until they have an answer, but alas, there's no way for us to contact them unless we return to the Holy Central Continent." Lian Li sighed.

"If you want, I can send them the message when I pick up the ingredients they are preparing for me in a few weeks. Though, the one who'll be going there will be Xiao Rong, who can reach the Holy Central Continent in less than a minute," Su Yang said.

"She can reach the Holy Central Continent in less than a minute? I cannot even begin to imagine the speed required to achieve such a feat..." Lian Li mumbled in a dazed voice.

"They're known as the fastest existence in the universe for a good reason," Tang Lingxi chuckled.

"What's going to happen to the Golden Lion Academy now that their Sect Master is pretty much dead?" Zhu Mingyi asked a moment later, "Are they going to disband, or will they appoint another Sect Master?"

"Normally, they would just find another Sect Master, but with the Sect still in ruins, and once news of what the Patriarch Gold did spreads, I don't think anyone would be willing to fill Patriarch Gold's shoes, not to mention my family will probably disband them even if someone is willing to become the next Sect Master," Lian Li said.

Sometime later, Su Yang said to them, "I am going to leave for a few days to visit my alchemy disciples."

"Oh? You have disciples learning alchemy under you? How lucky they must be," Zhu Mengyi said.

Sometime later, Su Yang left the Yin Yang Pavilion and traveled to the Divine Nature Garden. However, unlike previously, he did not disguise himself before leaving, and he went there as his real identity— as Su Yang.

"Halt! State your identity!"

The same guards that caused a commotion during his previous visit were present at the entrance, and they shouted at him to stop exactly like before.

"Name's Su Yang, and I am here to see your Sect Master and Luo Yixiao," Su Yang said to them.

"Su Yang...? From the Profound Blossom Sect?" The guards exchanged glances with each other. What business does the Sect Master of the Profound Blossom Sect have with their Divine Nature Garden, much less their Sect Master and his disciple? In fact, this is their first time interacting with each other.

However, since they were in the presence of the number one genius in the continent and also the Sect Master of the Profound Blossom Sect that has formed an Alliance with the Xie Family, they simply could not send him away regardless of his reason for approaching them.

Furthermore, after what happened last time, they didn't dare to make another mistake.

"Please give us a moment while we notify our Sect Master of your arrival! In the meantime, please wait in the guest area." One of the guards said before running off.

Afterward, Su Yang followed another guard into the sect and to a building meant for guests.

Meanwhile, inside the Sect Master's building, Senior Zeng was busy heating up a cauldron.

However, there was nothing inside the cauldron, and his alchemy flames remained at their peak temperature. If someone who didn't know what he was doing were to see this scene, they would think he'd gone crazy.

Knock *Knock*

"Sect Master! You have a visitor!" The guard from the entrance suddenly knocked on his door while calling for him.

"A visitor? It's probably Senior Xiao since the 1-month time limit he gave us is about to expire." Senior Zeng thought to himself.

However, to his surprise, the guard mentioned someone he did not expect at all, "It's Su Yang from the Profound Blossom Sect!"

"What? Su Yang? The number one genius who reached the Heavenly Spirit Realm at 17 years old? What's that cultivation prodigy doing here?" Senior Zeng cannot imagine why someone from the Profound Blossom Sect would come to their Divine Nature Garden.

"Maybe he's here to do business with us?"

Since the Divine Nature Garden is the number one pill supplier for sects besides the Burning Lotus Sect, it was very likely that was Su Yang's intention today.

"Wait a second... They also have an Alliance with the Burning Lotus Sect, so there's no reason for them to do business with us..."

A moment later, the guard continued, "He also wants to meet with Senior apprentice-sister Luo Yixiao."

"What? My disciple? Damn! So that must be the reason why he came here! He has his sight on my disciple! After all, he's also a Dual Cultivator! And there's only one reason why a Dual Cultivator wants to meet with someone as pretty as Luo Yixiao!" Senior Zeng quickly misunderstood the situation.

But alas, even if that was the case, Senior Zeng could not simply send Su Yang away due to his relationship with the Xie Family, as that might cause problems with the Xie Family!

Chapter 731 He'll Sully Her Pure Body!

"Bring Su Yang here!" Senior Zeng said to the guard after pondering for a minute.

"Yes!"

The guard then scurried to the guest house Su Yang was staying in and began leading Su Yang towards the Sect Master's quarters.

Meanwhile, when the disciples in the Divine Nature Sect noticed Su Yang's presence, they all began whispering to each other about his reason for being there.

Sometime later, Su Yang arrived at Senior Zeng's room.

"Please, have a seat, Su Yang. I have already prepared some tea for you." Senior Zeng gestured to the chair with a friendly smile.

"..."

A mysterious smile appeared on Su Yang's face as he sat down.

'So he doesn't recognize me, huh? Well, that's to be expected since this is his first time seeing me in this appearance.'

Su Yang didn't blame Senior Zeng for not realizing that he was the Alchemy Master, but that didn't mean he won't have fun with this situation.

A few moments later, Senior Zeng sat down across from him and spoke, "So, what business does the Sect Master of the Profound Blossom Sect have with our Divine Nature Garden? But before you answer

that, allow me to offer my congratulations to the Profound Blossom Sect for forming an alliance with the Xie Family, setting a precedent for the first time in history."

Su Yang sipped on the hot tea a few times before speaking, "Thank you. As for why I am here today... you should already know."

"..."

Senior Zeng looked at him with wide eyes. However, he pretended to be ignorant and said, "I'm sorry, but I really have no idea why you are here today... After all, our Divine Nature Garden has never communicated or dealt with the Profound Blossom Sect before. Furthermore, it wouldn't make sense if you are here for business since you already have the Burning Lotus Sect, which is currently the number one pill sect in the Eastern Continent due to the Earth Advancement Pills alongside the other pills that can only be obtained from them. I cannot imagine why you would need our help."

"Is that so?" Su Yang kept a nonchalant expression on his face so Senior Zeng was unable to read his expression.

"By the way, where is Luo Yixiao? I'm pretty sure I asked for her presence, too." Su Yang suddenly said.

"Uhh..."

Senior Zeng began sweating after hearing his words, and he said, "I apologize, but my disciple isn't in the sect right now."

"Oh? Where did she go?" Su Yang asked with an intrigued expression on his handsome face.

"She... uh... she left the sect not long ago to gather some herbs and ingredients for a new pill that we're concocting." Senior Zeng said, clearly not a good liar by the way his voice trembled.

Seeing this, Su Yang chuckled inwardly before speaking, "That's fine. I can wait."

"Are you sure? Even I don't know when she'll return. It could be weeks, even months, as that's how long medicine runs usually takes." Senior Zeng continued making stuff up, hoping that it would be enough to fool Su Yang.

"Wow, it takes that long for a medicine run? The pill you're concocting must be a very powerful one." Su Yang decided to follow the flow and act as though he knew nothing about alchemy.

"That's right. Even the most simple pills can take days, but this one... this new pill we're concocting is extremely complex and profound, and the ingredients required to concoct it are extremely rare, hence why it is taking so much longer." Senior Zeng spoke with a smile on his face after thinking that he'd managed to fool Su Yang.

"It must be difficult being an Alchemy Master. I cannot imagine sitting still all day just to concoct a single pill. After all, if you didn't know, I am a Dual Cultivator who likes to move around— especially in the bedroom," Su Yang spoke with a smile on his face.

Senior Zeng's face stiffened after hearing Su Yang's words, and he cried inwardly, 'I definitely cannot let this damn pervert meet my disciple! He'll sully her pure body!'

"Anyway, I apologize for this inconvenience. Even though you came all the way here from the Profound Blossom Sect, my disciple isn't available. If there's anything else you need, perhaps I can be of help." Senior Zeng said to him.

Even if Su Yang asked for another disciple, he wouldn't mind as much, as long as it wasn't Luo Yixiao.

"Well, it can't be helped if Luo Yixiao isn't here. I really wanted to meet her, especially after all of the good things I have heard about her." Su Yang sighed out loud, sounding like an arrogant young master who had his excitement crushed.

"..."

A weird expression appeared on Senior Zeng's face after hearing Su Yang's bold words. If it weren't for Su Yang's status, he would have already begun throwing fists at Su Yang.

"Since she's not here today, can you let me know when she returns? I'll return here as soon as possible when that happens. I'm also sure that Luo Yixiao would like to see me."

"Yes... of course..." Senior Zeng forced a smile on his face and nodded.

"Then I shall see you next time."

Su Yang stood up and began walking towards the exit.

However, when he reached halfway to the exit, the door opened, and a very pretty young lady walked into the room.

When Senior Zeng saw his disciple's pretty face in the room, his eyes widened with shock, "W-What are you doing here, Yixiao?! I specifically told you to stay in your room and do not come out!" Senior Zeng cried out loud, accidentally revealing the truth to Su Yang.

Su Yang turned around and spoke with a profound expression on his face, "Hoh? So you purposefully hid her from me, even lying straight to my face? What is the meaning of this, Senior Zeng?"

"Uhh... about that..." Senior Zeng was speechless. How is he going to talk his way out of this predicament?!

Chapter 732 Are You Really Senior Xiao?

"What is this about?" Luo Yixiao suddenly spoke, and she looked at Senior Zeng before speaking, "I know you told me to stay in my room, but I was called here by Master."

"Eh? Your Master? But that would be Senior Xiao..." Senior Zeng realized that something was amiss there, and he turned to look at Su Yang with his eyes wide from shock and disbelief.

"I-Impossible... Y-You can't possibly be..."

Luo Yixiao quickly interrupted, "Are you Senior Xiao?"

She looked at Su Yang with a surprised expression on her face, as she didn't expect him to be so young.

"How can you tell?" Su Yang asked her with a smile on his face.

After a moment of silence. Luo Yixiao spoke, "Your demeanor... And your aura just feels so similar... Furthermore, it's been one month since our last lecture, so the time is also right."

"Y-You're really Senior Xiao? B-But you're..." Senior Zeng looked at him with his eyes still filled with disbelief.

"But I am Su Yang? But I am a Dual Cultivator so I shouldn't know any Alchemy? But I am too young?" Su Yang spoke with a smile on his face.

"Y-Yes! That's right!" Senior Zeng nodded with a dazed look on his old face.

"As punishment for not recognizing me and even lying straight to my face, I won't tell you so that you can think about it for yourself." Su Yang said to him before turning to look at Luo Yixiao.

"Indeed, I am the mysterious Alchemy Master Senior Xiao, and this is my real identity— Su Yang, Sect Master of the Profound Blossom Sect and a Dual Cultivator."

"As for why I suddenly decided to reveal my real identity, it's simply because I no longer have any more reasons to hide."

"Anyway, I am here today to check on your progress. Are you ready? Of course, if you do not want to accept me as your Master because of my identity, that's fine too."

Luo Yixiao shook her head and said, "It doesn't matter who you are because that wasn't the reason I accepted you as my Master. I accepted you as my Master because of your Alchemy skills, and as long as that's real, I have no reason to not call you Master."

Su Yang nodded and looked at Senior Zeng next before speaking, "What about you? Are you still willing to call me Master?"

Senior Zeng swallowed nervously before lowering his head.

"I am in the same shoes as Luo Yixiao. I bow to your Alchemy skills, not your identity, Master!" He said a moment later.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Good. Now show me your results after one month of training. If you cannot achieve the results I wanted, I will still disown you so don't think I will go easy on you just because you know my real identity."

"Yes, Master!"

Su Yang then followed Senior Zeng and Luo Yixiao to a pill room where they will be conducting their monthly evaluation.

"I will go first."

Senior Zeng stood in front of the cauldron and took a deep breath before releasing his alchemy flames.

Whoosh!

A massive ball of alchemy flames appeared beneath the pill cauldron, quickly heating it up and turning it red.

Within just a few minutes, the pill cauldron reached the temperature Su Yang wanted.

"Now keep it at the same temperature for an hour," Su Yang said.

Senior Zeng nodded slightly before focusing on controlling his alchemy flames.

Thirty minutes later, Senior Zeng's body was covered in sweat with his robes completely soaked. However, his breathing was still relatively calm and controlled.

50 minutes into the evaluation, Senior Zeng began panting heavily.

5 minutes later, his panting grew even heavier with his vision blurry, feeling on the verge of collapsing from exhaustion.

"You can do it, Master!" Luo Yixiao cheered for him.

And to Senior Zeng's surprise, after hearing Luo Yixiao's voice, he regained some energy, which allowed him to endure the last five minutes.

"Congratulations, you have passed. Luo Yixiao, it's your turn now." Su Yang looked at her.

She immediately nodded and stepped forward.

Once the pill cauldron cooled down, Luo Yixiao released her alchemy flames and began her evaluation.

And unlike Senior Zeng, she'd managed to endure 30 minutes without breaking a single sweat, only beginning to sweat after another 10 minutes.

50 minutes into the evaluation, Luo Yixiao's robes were soaked in sweat and sticking to her body, outlining her slim but balanced figure almost perfectly.

After another 10 minutes, Luo Yixiao passed the evaluation with only heavy panting, achieving much better results than Senior Zeng.

"Looks like it won't be long before you surpass your first Master," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"Anyway, now that you have passed my test and managed to avoid being disowned, it does not mean you can begin slacking, as I want you to do this every day until you can do it for an entire day without breaking a sweat."

"An entire day without breaking a sweat?! Is that even possible?" Senior Zeng exclaimed in a baffled voice.

"It is if you practice until you fall unconscious every day," Su Yang said. "Trust me, I speak from experience."

And then he continued, "Anyway, go clean up so we can pick up Cai Yan before we head to the Burning Lotus Sect. I am going to teach you a few alchemy flame controlling techniques today."

"Right away!"

Senior Zeng and Luo Yixiao quickly left the scene to clean the sweat from their body and change their clothes.

Ten minutes later, they returned to Su Yang's side with a refreshed appearance, and then they left the Divine Nature Garden on Su Yang's flying boat shortly later, quickly approaching the Cai Family.

A few minutes later, they arrived at the Cai Family.

However, when the guards saw Su Yang with Luo Yixiao and Senior Zeng, they were immediately puzzled, as they had expected the Alchemy Master Senior Xiao to be with them, not some handsome young man.

--

Check the comments for the discord! Get NSFW character illustrations!

Chapter 733 The Xiang Family

"We're here for Cai Yan," Senior Zeng said to the guards after approaching them, as he was sure that they would not be able to recognize Su Yang as Senior Xiao.

"Lady Cai..."

The guards exchanged nervous looks with each other.

"Is there something wrong?" Luo Yixiao noticed the weird atmosphere around them and decided to ask.

"Well... How should I say this... The Young Lady is currently in a meeting with the Xiang Family," one of the guards said.

"The Xiang Family? Do you mean 'that' Xiang Family?" Luo Yixiao showed a surprised look after hearing this family name.

"Xiang Family? Why does it sound so familiar?" Su Yang raised an eyebrow in a puzzled manner, yet he cannot recall why he found this family name so familiar.

"The Xiang Family is one of the Four Great Families in the Eastern Continent from the Southern Region," Senior Zeng said with a profound expression on his face.

"But why would one of the Four Great Families be here? And what do they want from the Cai Family, much less Cai Yan?" Senior Zeng mumbled.

"The Xiang Family is actually here with a marriage proposal, as they want our Young Lady to marry their Eldest Son, Xiang Zhongfa." The guards explained the situation to them.

"Marriage proposal?" Senior Zeng and Luo Yixiao looked at each other.

While the Cai Family is a pretty powerful family in the Eastern Continent, they are nowhere near as powerful as one of the Four Great Families, so it didn't make sense for the Xiang Family to be the one to approach the Cai Family for a marriage proposal, as it should be the other way around.

However, if they consider one thing, then that might change the entire scenario.

Senior Zeng and Luo Yixiao realized this almost simultaneously, and they turned to look at Su Yang. Perhaps the main reason why the Xiang Family is proposing marriage is because of Cai Yan's status as Su Yang's disciple.

If that was the case, the Xiang Family has every reason to approach the Cai Family, as being the disciple of one of the most powerful and renowned Alchemy Masters in the world gave Cai Yan near unparalleled status that surpasses even the Xiang Family, one of the Four Great Families.

"Regardless of what they are doing, I am going to pick Cai Yan up." Su Yang said as he ignored the guards and walked into the building.

"W-Wait a second, young man! You can't just—"

"Don't bother," Senior Zeng placed his hands on the guard's shoulder and shook his head. "You don't want to stop him."

"W-Why? Who is that young man? He looks very familiar, but I cannot..." The guard asked him.

"That's Su Yang from the Profound Blossom Sect," Luo Yixiao said.

"The Profound Blossom Sect?!" The guards exclaimed in a shocked voice.

Nowadays, the name Profound Blossom Sect is widespread throughout the continent and mentioned no matter where people went, and then Su Yang's name would be mentioned in the same sentence somewhere down the line.

However, the guards became puzzled the next moment. Since when did their Cai Family have any relationships with the Profound Blossom Sect, much less their number one genius Su Yang?

Meanwhile, inside one of the rooms within the Cai Family's household, Cai Yan was seated beside her parents with the Xiang Family sitting across from her.

Not including the servants they brought, the Xiang Family consisted of two people— a beautiful middle-aged woman and a handsome young man in his late twenties.

"So? What do you say to my Xiang Family's marriage proposal?" The middle-aged woman suddenly said.

"Well..." Cai Yan's parents turned to look at their daughter with a nervous expression on their faces after being pressured by the Xiang Family to give up Cai Yan to the Xiang Family— or more specifically, the young man sitting only a few feet from them.

Though, it was not as though the Xiang Family directly threatened them to give Cai Yan to them, only subtly hinting at it.

"What do you think, Yan'er? The Xiang Family is one of the Four Great Families, and the person you'll be marrying, Xiang Zhongfa, is a very talented Cultivator who has reached the Earth Spirit Realm before 30 years old! I don't think you'll regret becoming his wife." Cai Yan's father said to her, clearly siding with the Xiang Family.

After all, no sane person would refuse a marriage proposal from one of the Four Great Families!

However, Cai Yan suddenly lowered her head and said, "I'm sorry, but I will have to refuse this marriage proposal."

"What?!"

Everybody in the room looked at her with wide eyes.

"Why did you refuse? Am I not good enough for you, Fairy Cai?" Xiang Zhongfa exclaimed in a surprised voice, sounding as though he was in disbelief. After all, this is his first time being rejected by a woman!

"No, it has nothing to do with you, Young Master Xiang." Cai Yan shook her head.

"Then why? I won't leave without an explanation!"

"Because I simply do not have the time for something like marriage. I am currently studying Alchemy, and that is already time-consuming enough. If I marry you, I won't have time for Alchemy or vice-versa." Cai Yan calmly explained.

"That's pure nonsense!" The middle-aged woman suddenly interrupted, and she continued, "You are merely using that as an excuse! There are plenty of women out there who are Alchemists and married! There are even some who have children! Yet you dare claim that you won't have time for my son?! That's outrageous!"

"Madam Xiang, please calm down... I'm sure my daughter did not mean it like that..." Cai Yan's mother spoke up for her.

Meanwhile, Cai Yan remained calm and said, "While that is true, I am not just any Alchemist. I am Master Xiao's disciple, who is the number one Alchemy Master in this world."

"You..." Madam Xiang was speechless when Cai Yan brought her Master into the discussion, instantly turning the tide.

"Well said!" An unfamiliar voice suddenly resounded in the room, causing everybody there to look at the door.

Chapter 734 Secret Lover

"Who's there?! How dare you barge into this place! Do you have any idea who we are?!" Madam Xiang stood up and pointed at Su Yang who'd just entered the room without any warning.

"No, I don't— not that I care at all." Su Yang entered the room with a calm expression on his face.

"Y-You are..." Xiang Zhongfa immediately recognized Su Yang's face, as he was present at the Regional Tournament.

However, before he could even open his mouth to speak, his mother approached Su Yang and said in an overbearing voice, "I don't know who you are but if you think you are being smart then I highly urge you to get on your knees and beg for forgiveness!"

Xiang Zhongfa immediately began sweating after seeing his mother's reaction, but alas, even if he wanted to stop her, it was already too late.

"Get on my knees and beg? I don't think you can bear the responsibilities for that, Xiang Family," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

Madam Xiang immediately frowned after hearing his words.

'So he knows our identity? Yet he's acting this arrogant before us? Who is he?' she pondered inwardly.

"Excuse me..." Cai Yan suddenly stood up and approached them.

Once she stood beside Su Yang, Cai Yan took a few deep breaths before looking at him with her eyes wide with surprise.

"Are you perhaps...?" Cai Yan mumbled in a voice of disbelief.

Su Yang chuckled after seeing this, as he recalled when Su Yin managed to guess his real identity by his smell. Because of Cai Yan's powerful nose, it was only natural that she would be able to smell 'Senior Xiao' from Su Yang.

"You know this insolent little brat? Don't tell me he's the real reason you refuse to marry my son? Is he your lover? Everything makes sense now." Madam Xiang turned to look at Cai Yun and said to her.

"What?! Is that true, Cai Yan?! Is he really your lover?!" Even her parents stood up in shock, as this is their first time hearing about their daughter having a secret lover.

Cai Yan raised her eyebrows at their reaction. However, before she could even say anything, Su Yang suddenly wrapped his arms around her shoulders and pulled her into his body.

"That's right. She's my woman. What are you going to do about it?" Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

'M-Master...?' Cai Yan looked at him with a surprised face and completely speechless.

"Haha! I knew it!" Madam Xiang coldly sneered in disgust after seeing this, and she continued, "To think I wasted my precious time here, even almost fooled by a vixen who already has her legs spread for another man! Cai Family, I will have you bear responsibility for playing with the Xiang Family!"

"As for you, you little brat! If you think you can hide your identity from me, you are dead wrong! Once I learn your name and background, I will also be coming for you!"

"P-Please wait, Senior Xiang! We also didn't know about this! I swear!" Cai Yan's mother quickly said, and she looked at Cai Yan and said, "I demand an explanation for this, Yan'er!"

It was at this moment Senior Zeng and Luo Yixao caught up with Su Yang and entered the room. However, they immediately realized the tense and heavy atmosphere in the room.

'W-What on earth happened here?' Senior Zeng cried inwardly.

"You are... Senior Zeng? What are you doing here?" Madam Xiang immediately recognized Senior Zeng's old face the moment she saw him because their Xiang Family has done business with the Divine Nature Garden many times throughout the years.

"Well..." Senior Zeng scratched his head, unsure of how to answer her question.

Meanwhile, Cai Yan's parents said, "Senior Zeng! Luo Yixao! If you're here, does this mean Senior Xiao is also here?"

"Senior Xiao is here? Where?" Even Madam Xiang couldn't help but become excited after hearing his name. If the Xiang Family can forge a connection with Senior Xiao, he might supply them with Earth Advancement Pills and perhaps even Heaven Transcendence Pills!

"Senior Xiao is... uhh..." Senior Zeng glanced at 'Senior Xiao' who was standing right in front of Madam Xiang. He wanted to say 'He's right in front of you!' but he didn't know if he could reveal his real identity.

However, while Senior Zeng was pondering, Su Yang began walking away with Cai Yan still in his arms.

"We have already wasted enough time here. Let's hurry up and meet with Wang Shuren at the Burning Lotus Sect and begin the lectures," Su Yang said to them in a loud voice.

"Huh?" Everybody in the room snapped their heads to look at Su Yang with wide eyes. Although their gaze was filled with confusion at first, once they realized the meaning behind his words, Cai Yan's parents' exclaimed in a shocked voice, "Y-Y-You're Senior Xiao?!"

"What?! This brat is Senior Xiao?! That's impossible! Not even an idiot would come to this conclusion!" Madam Xiang immediately voiced her doubts, and she continued, "There's simply no way someone this young can reach the Alchemy mastery that Senior Xiao has achieved! Not at his age!"

Hearing Madam Xiang's words, Su Yang stopped walking and said with a smile on his face, "In the cultivation world the most deceitful thing would be one's appearance. If you continue judging someone by their cover, you'll deeply regret it."

Su Yang then turned to look at Cai Yan's parents and said, "I know you're in the middle of something right now, but Cai Yan has already given her answer, so I'll be borrowing her for a few days for lectures."

Speechless, Cai Yan's parents could only nod their heads in a dazed manner.

After Su Yang left with his disciples, Madam Xiang screamed loudly while stomping her feet, "Just who is that man?!"

Xiang Zhongfa responded a moment later, "Mother... That was Su Yang... from the Profound Blossom Sect."

"What?!" Madam Xiang turned to look at him with her eyes wide from shock.

Chapter 735 God-like Alchemy Flames Control

"What?! That was Su Yang?! Profound Blossom Sect's Master and the number one genius in the Eastern Continent?!" Madam Xiang exclaimed in a shocked voice, and she could feel her back soaked in cold sweats a moment later.

"Why didn't you tell me?! Why did you wait until the last second when it's too late?!" Madam Xiang approached Xiang Zhongfa with heavy steps before slapping him in the face. "Do you want to watch our Xiang Family go down?!"

Sometime later, Madam Xiang stormed out of the building angrily. "We're leaving!"

Meanwhile, at the Burning Lotus Sect, Wang Shuren stared at Su Yang with a dazed expression on her face. What happened to them? Why was Su Yang not disguised like usual? Did he reveal his real identity to them already? Should she greet him as Su Yang or Senior Xiao? Many questions appeared in Wang Shuren's mind when she saw them.

"Just call me Su Yang. They already know that Senior Xiao is my alias," Su Yang said to her after seeing her speechless face.

"Okay..." Wang Shuren nodded.

Sometime later, once they were inside and seated, Su Yang said to them, "Allow me to introduce myself again. My name is Su Yang, and I am the Sect Master of the Profound Blossom Sect. If you have any questions, ask me now."

Senior Zeng immediately raised his hands and asked, "Are you really 18 years old? And where on earth did you learn Alchemy? Who taught you?"

"Not holding back with the questions, huh?" Su Yang smiled, and he continued, "Well, I don't really care. For your first question regarding my age, I am and I am not really 18 years old at the same time. As for where I learned Alchemy, somewhere far away. The person who taught me Alchemy is my friend."

"..."

Senior Zeng was speechless. What kind of vague answers are those?

Luo Yixiao then asked, "Are we allowed to speak about your real identity? Now that the Xiang Family knows of your real background, I doubt they'll keep it a secret."

Su Yang nodded and said, "Before I even revealed my real identity as Su Yang to you guys I have already prepared to have my identity revealed to the entire world. It's not that much of a secret anyway, as I would have let the world know sooner or later."

A few moments later, Su Yang asked, "Any more questions? If not, we'll start with the lecture."

"Bai Lihua won't be joining us again?" Wang Shuren asked after noticing her absence.

"Yes, I am teaching her separately, and I'll go to her after this."

Wang Shuren nodded.

"Anyway, I will be teaching you a few flame controlling techniques. Now that the strength of your alchemy flames have increased exponentially and your control has improved as much, you can begin to learn these techniques, which will help you even more."

Su Yang raised his palms and continued, "Watch this."

A few seconds later, he released his alchemy flames.

The alchemy flames, however, did not act as normal fire would, and they danced around in a rhythmic manner.

"What on earth...?" Senior Zeng watched with wide eyes.

"This is not all I can do."

Su Yang then controlled the alchemy flames to form the shape of a dragon before letting it fly around him as though it was a real dragon.

"Heavens! This is beyond flame control!" Senior Zeng exclaimed in a shocked voice.

After the dragon made of alchemy flames flew a few circles, it landed back on Su Yang's palms before it changed forms again, becoming two human-like figures that danced with each other on Su Yang's palms.

"..."

Even Wang Shuren was shocked speechless by Su Yang's god-like flame control that was more like flame art!

However, Su Yang was not done, as he released even more alchemy flames later before transforming it into a life-sized human figure that resembled himself.

The alchemy flame Su Yang then walked to Cai Yan before extending its hands towards her like a gentleman asking for a dance.

Cai Yan swallowed nervously before grabbing the alchemy flame's hands.

"What a warm feeling..." Cai Yan mumbled in a dazed voice when she felt the warm feeling in her hands. Although the texture of the alchemy flames did not feel like she was actually touching another human, the temperature definitely felt very realistic.

Sometime later, the alchemy flames disappeared.

"Due to my insufficient cultivation base, this is all I can manage for now. However, if you completely master this flame controlling technique, you can even create an entire world out of nothing but alchemy flames— that is the level my friend who taught me Alchemy has reached," Su Yang said to them.

"Creating an entire world out of nothing but alchemy flames...? Is that even possible? I cannot imagine it." Senior Zeng shook his head.

Hearing Senior Zeng's words, Su Yang released his alchemy flames again, and he proceeded to shape the alchemy flames into a perfectly round sphere. A few moments later, trees and buildings began appearing on the alchemy flames, shocking Senior Zeng.

"As I said, if you master this technique, you can create an entire world on your very own palms. However, the chances of you achieving that level are slim to none. Though, you only need to comprehend this technique a little bit to rule the Eastern Continent with alchemy." Su Yang said as he closed his palms, causing the fiery world to explode and disappear into thin air.

"A world... with my own alchemy flames..." Wang Shuren mumbled in a dazed voice with a blank look on her face.

Su Yang turned to look at Cai Yan a moment later and said, "You won't be able to learn this technique yet until you can control your unique alchemy flames to a certain extent. However, that is not to say I have nothing for you."

He then retrieved a scroll and tossed it at her. "That is a flame controlling technique specially made for those with unique alchemy flames. You can go ahead and start studying it now while I teach the others first. I will be with you soon."

Cai Yan nodded, and she began reading the scroll.

Chapter 736 Do You Remember What You Said to My Family?

Once Cai Yan began studying the technique, Su Yang gave Wang Shuren and the other two disciples their own technique.

"The three of you will learn the flame controlling technique I'd just demonstrated," he said to them.

"Read through it a few times and ask me any questions that you have regarding the technique and I will answer them to the best of my ability."

They nodded and immediately began reading the technique with a serious expression on their faces.

Sometime later, Wang Shuren and the others asked Su Yang about the things which they were unable to understand from the technique, and it took almost a hundred questions from each person before they could understand the technique just enough to put it to practice.

Many hours later, Wang Shuren spoke in a joyful tone as she controlled the tiny worm on her palm that was created from her alchemy flames, "Look! I can finally make it move!"

The worm-like flames on her palm began moving extremely slowly, almost as slow as a snail. However, a few seconds later, the worm-shaped alchemy flame exploded and disappeared into thin air.

"Oh..." Wang Shuren sighed afterward. It had taken her many hours of practice for that achievement, but she could only control it for a few seconds. It was very disheartening for her.

Seeing this, Su Yang said, "Shuren, your progress is already very fast. You can't expect to master the technique in a few hours. Nobody is that talented."

"Un..." she nodded.

Once Wang Shuren and the other two disciples could practice the technique by themselves without Su Yang's supervision, Su Yang approached Cai Yan and began lecturing her.

"Master... I can only start using my alchemy flames at the Earth Spirit Realm, right? Then why do I need to practice a technique meant for my alchemy flames now?" Cai Yan suddenly asked him.

"It's always better to prepare for the future, as it will save you much more time than starting once you can start using your alchemy flames. If you start now, you'll be able to use this technique immediately when you can instead of needing to wait a few more months or even years."

"That makes sense..." Cai Yan nodded.

And then she asked, "Master, this isn't related to alchemy, but I heard that all of the female participants during the Regional Tournament were personally trained by you, is that right?"

"The disciples? Yes, that's correct. I personally trained them." Su Yang nodded, and he continued, "Most of them were only at the Elementary Spirit Realm when we first started."

"What about those two participants at the Earth Spirit Realm? Fang Zhelan and Sun Jingjing? What cultivation level were they before? And how long did it take for them to reach the Earth Spirit Realm?" Cai Yan continued to ask, her intentions unclear to Luo Yixiao and Senior Zeng who were listening in the background.

"They were at the True Spirit Realm before, and it took roughly half a year of training. Of course, it required them to train almost day and night every day," Su Yang said as he recalled his time with them in the bedroom throughout the months.

"Half a year..." Cai Yan mumbled.

After a long moment of silence, she looked at Su Yang with a serious look on her face before speaking, "Master, do you think you can also train me to the Earth Spirit Realm?"

"Eh?" Luo Yixiao and Senior Zeng stopped practicing to look at Cai Yan with wide eyes. Even Wang Shuren was staring with a surprised look on her face.

"You are aware that I— we are Dual Cultivators, right? Our method of training may not be what you are thinking," Su Yang said to her.

However, Cai Yan shook her head and said, "No, I am fully aware of what training with you entails, Master, and I am prepared to do everything it takes to reach the Earth Spirit Realm!"

"I know you want to reach the Earth Spirit Realm and start training your alchemy flames as soon as possible, but you shouldn't sacrifice your body in order to do so, as you might regret it afterward."

"Though, if you truly want to train with me using that method, I won't reject you, since it's my job as your Master to train you— no matter the method. However, you should take some time to think thoroughly whether you really want to go through with that decision or not, as it's not something you can take back afterward," Su Yang said to her.

Cai Yan turned silent and nodded a moment later. "Okay, I will think about it some more, Master."

"Good, now ask me any question you have regarding the technique."

Cai Yan proceeded to ask Su Yang questions she had regarding the technique, acting as though their previous conversation never happened.

Meanwhile, Wang Shuren and the others were still dumbfounded by Cai Yan's boldness. If it were them, they would definitely not have the courage to ask Su Yang such a personal question before other people.

'Such dedication! This young lady is on another level!' Senior Zeng admired Cai Yan's dedication to alchemy.

A few days later, Su Yang said to them, "Okay, this is the end of our lecture for this month. Continue practicing what you have learned during this lecture because I will evaluate your progress again the next time we meet, and if your results are not satisfactory, I will disown you."

"Yes, Master!"

Sometime later, Luo Yixiao and Senior Zeng left the building whilst Cai Yan remained in the room to speak with Su Yang.

"Go wait in your room, I'll come back later to 'train' you some more," Su Yang said to Wang Shuren, who immediately nodded with excitement before leaving them alone.

Once Cai Yan was alone with him, Su Yang asked her, "Well? Have you thought about it properly?"

Cai Yan nodded before speaking with a serious expression on her face, "Master, do you remember what you said to my family? That I was your 'woman'? I want to make that into a reality."

Chapter 737 Wang Shuren's Decision

Hearing Cai Yan's words, Su Yang nodded with a smile on his handsome face, and he said, "Although I can help you reach the Earth Spirit Realm in a few months, it requires you to cultivate with me nearly every day, so you'll have to stay near me until you reach your goals. Are you willing to stay in the Profound Blossom Sect for the time being?"

Cai Yan nodded, "I will let my parents know."

Sometime later, Su Yang brought Luo Yixiao and Senior Zeng back to the Divine Nature Garden, and Cai Yan returned to her own Cai Family.

After Su Yang dropped off Cai Yan, he returned to the Burning Lotus Sect to train Wang Shuren some more.

Meanwhile, Cai Yan was approached by her parents regarding what happened a few days ago with the Xiang Family.

"Yan'er, is it true that you are in that kind of relationship with Su Yang?" Her father asked her with a serious expression on his face.

Cai Yan nodded, and she said with a calm expression on her face, "I will be offering my body to him soon, and I will also be staying in the Profound Blossom Sect so he can help me reach the Earth Spirit Realm."

"The Earth Spirit Realm!" Her parents exchanged looks with each other, their eyes filled with excitement.

Even though their negotiation with the Xiang Family was a failure, that could be considered as a blessing disguised as a misfortune!

Not only is Su Yang also from one of the Four Great Families, but he's also the Sect Master of the Profound Blossom Sect, the most famous sect in the Eastern Continent as of this moment! Furthermore, Su Yang is recognized as the number one genius of the Eastern Continent who achieved the Heavenly Spirit Realm at a very young age!

Compared to the Xiang Family and Xiang Zhongfa, Su Yang was countless times more amazing and worthy! In fact, Su Yang is, without doubt, the number one choice in the entire Eastern Continent

overall! If one were to question one million women in the Eastern Continent who they would consider as an ideal partner with Su Yang a part of the choice, 99 percent if not all of them would say it's Su Yang!

In terms of status, Su Yang was superior. In terms of looks, Su Yang was superior. In terms of talents, Su Yang was superior. No matter what aspects they compared between Su Yang and the Xiang Family, Su Yang would always come out top.

"Listen carefully, Yan'er! Do not screw this up no matter what! There are already people saying that Su Yang might be the next Lord Xie! If you follow him, our Cai Family will surely rise, perhaps even becoming a Great Family in the future!"

Hearing her parents' words, Cai Yan could only shake her head inwardly.

"I am going to prepare for my stay at the Profound Blossom Sect. I will be there for at least half a year," Cai Yan said to them a moment later.

"Okay! If you need anything, just let us know!" Her parents said, completely supporting her decision.

Meanwhile, after Su Yang returned to the Burning Lotus Sect, he went straight into Wang Shuren's room, who was already naked and on the bed, her gaze filled with enthusiasm and lust. A few moments later, they began cultivating, and Wang Shuren's sexy voice quickly filled the room.

After a few hours, Wang Shuren collapsed on the bed with an exhausted expression and her body covered in hot Yang Qi and sweat.

"Mmm... Your body is adapting very nicely, and your endurance is improving at a rapid pace," Su Yang said to her afterward. "It won't be long until we can continue cultivating for an entire day at that intensity."

Wang Shuren turned her body over and said in an exhausted voice, "My body is also used to being pleased by you... I don't know what I'll do once you leave this world."

Su Yang smiled at her words and said, "You can follow me to the Divine Heavens."

"..." Wang Shuren closed her eyes and became silent for a moment before speaking in a mumbling voice, "Perhaps I really should..."

Wang Shuren suddenly moved her arms until her hands were between her legs, and she wiped her wet slit with one of her fingers, picking up some of the Yang Qi that was overflowing her hole.

After staring at the sticky substance on her fingers for a moment, Wang Shuren said, "Su Yang... Is it too late for me to want to follow you?"

"What do you think?" he responded with a question.

After a moment of silence, she spoke, "Over these last few months, I have been pondering about what I really wanted to do with my life. At first, when I was only in charge of a small auction house, my dream was to become a renowned Alchemist. However, after meeting you, that seemingly distant dream became a reality, and I am now one of the most recognized Alchemy Masters in the Eastern Continent with widespread fame."

"I can continue to spend the rest of my life in this small world as a top Alchemist, or I can abandon all of my fame and achievements in this world to follow you to another world, where I will once again return to being a nobody."

"However, in that world, I can continue to improve my Alchemy and experience things that are still incomprehensible to me, such as creating an entire world with alchemy flames. There's also the Alchemy God... I really want to meet this Alchemy God and see for myself just what kind of person is at the peak of Alchemy..."

After she finished mumbling to herself, Wang Shuren suddenly stood up before kneeling back down on the bed and kowtowing to Su Yang, "Su Yang... I want to follow you to the Divine Heavens! I am no longer satisfied with my achievements in this world after seeing just how much more there is to alchemy! Please! Take me with you! In return, I will give you my everything!"

Chapter 738 Abandoning Everything

"You have really changed a lot since our first meeting, Shuren," Su Yang said with a smile on his face. "If you went back in time, I am willing to bet that even your past self won't recognize you."

"This is all because of you, Su Yang. You were the one who changed me. You offered your hands, dragged me out of the well, and opened up my eyes, even giving me an opportunity to rise to the peak in this world as an alchemist, which has been my dream for the longest."

"I am sure you already know this, but once you go to the Divine Heavens, it might be impossible to return to this world. Are you truly willing to abandon all of your achievements in this world and start from fresh?"

Wang Shuren nodded with a resolute expression on her face, and she said, "As long as I follow you, Su Yang, it doesn't matter if I have to start from the beginning, because I have faith that you will once again help me reach the peak."

"To be completely honest, I don't know if I'll be able to help you reach a similar status in the Divine Heavens, as the competition there is extremely fierce and nothing like this small place where Alchemists barely know anything about alchemy. However, I know someone who might be able to help you achieve that."

"You mean...?" Wang Shuren looked at him with flickering eyes.

"Yes, I am talking about the Alchemy God. However, I cannot guarantee you anything, as she rarely accepts any disciples, especially if they are not talented or cannot pique her interest. I will speak with her and try to convince her to accept you, but there will be no guarantees."

"If the Alchemy God doesn't accept you as her disciple, there's nothing I can do except continue teaching you about alchemy like currently. Furthermore, you will have to endure much worse training than now, and you might even die from exhaustion. Are you still willing to follow me to the Divine Heavens even after knowing that?"

Wang Shuren nodded her head without hesitation.

"Of course, I would like to improve my alchemy skills as much as possible, but that is not the only reason why I want to follow you to the Divine Heavens, Su Yang. You're the other reason why I am willing to abandon everything. After spending so much time with you, and as my only partner in this life, I don't think I'll be able to live a normal life without you."

And she continued, "If the Alchemy God doesn't accept me as her disciple, I would like to continue being your disciple for the rest of my life."

However, to Wang Shuren's surprise, Su Yang shook his head and said, "That won't do."

"Huh? Why? I am well aware that I am not worthy to be anything more than just your disciple, but..." Wang Shuren quickly panicked.

Su Yang quickly interrupted, "That's not what I mean, you silly. Allow me to finish."

Hearing his words, Wang Shuren nodded with a dazed look on her face.

"What I mean is— I cannot let you remain as my disciple forever, as that would mean I have failed as your Master. Every disciple out there will have to eventually graduate as a disciple and become a Master themselves, and if they remain as a disciple forever, then it's the Master's fault for not training the disciple properly. Therefore, I do not plan on having you as my disciple forever." Su Yang explained to her the meaning behind his words.

"Oh... that makes sense..." Wang Shuren released a sigh of relief after realizing that Su Yang didn't reject her.

"I have a suggestion," Su Yang suddenly said.

"What is it?" Wang Shuren looked at him with a slightly nervous gaze.

"How about you join my family? That way, you can be by my side forever even when you graduate as my disciple," Su Yang said a moment later with a smile on his face.

"J-Join your family...? Does this mean..." Wang Shuren stared at him with a dazed look on her beautiful face.

"It means you'll officially be my woman, Shuren. I mean, our relationship currently is not much different, anyway, so why not make it official?" Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"I-I am going to be your woman? I mean... you're willing to accept someone like me? I do not belong to any powerful family, nor do I have any real talents, and I used to be some lowly sect elder from an average sect. Meanwhile, you're..."

Su Yang shook his head and said, "I have said this many times already, but I will say this as many times as I need to— I don't care for one's background or status. As long as we're compatible and I want you by my side, I will accept them. In fact, despite having countless partners before, most of them were short relationships that lasted a day or two at most. If I can spend over an entire year with you and still enjoy your company, I can do it for an eternity."

"And who would refuse someone with your amazing body?" Su Yang chuckled as he looked at Wang Shuren's mature yet perfectly proportioned body.

Sometime later, Su Yang explained the family rules to Wang Shuren.

"Well? Are you willing to join the family and spend the rest of your life with me in the Divine Heavens?" Su Yang asked her afterward.

"I am willing!" Wang Shuren nodded.

"Good. Then let's give you that Family Seal now." Su Yang began approaching her sexy and naked body.

"W-Wait! We're going to do it now? But I still haven't recovered..." Wang Shuren said.

"Aren't you going to be the Alchemy God's disciple? If you cannot even handle this, you'll definitely die from her training later!" Su Yang said.

"Oh... right..." Wang Shuren took a deep breath and resolved herself.

"Give me everything you've got, Su Yang! Even if you break my body, I won't tell you to stop!" she said afterward.

Su Yang nodded, and he proceeded to torture Wang Shuren's body some more with intense pleasure.

Chapter 739 As a Reward, How About a Kiss?

Su Yang cultivated with Wang Shuren for many hours until Wang Shuren could no longer physically move even a single finger due to exhaustion.

"I know you're probably already regretting this, but you'll have to endure much strenuous training later, and I am going to repeat every time we cultivate this until you have become the Alchemy God's disciple," Su Yang said as he smeared some of his blood onto the Family Seal on Wang Shuren's body.

Wang Shuren's body trembled with delight after feeling his fingers caress the skin below her belly button, and her little sister released another flow of Yin Qi as the Family Seal emitted a warm heat, indicating that it had been activated.

"The Family Seal has been activated. Welcome to the Su Family, Shuren." Su Yang said to her.

"Mm..." Wang Shuren released a low-sounding noise in response, as she was too exhausted to even open her mouth to speak, much less nod her head.

"Get some rest because I'll be preparing your body and mind two times a week instead of one now until I feel that you are ready to become the Alchemy God's disciple."

"Nnn..."

"Then I'll leave now to lecture Bai Lihua. I'll see you later," Su Yang got dressed before leaving her house and flying towards the Heavenly Swan Sect.

Sometime later, Su Yang arrived at the Heavenly Swan Sect and descended directly in front of Bai Lihua's living quarters.

A few moments later he knocked on the door, Bai Lihua appeared in front of him with a weird expression on her face.

"What? Is there something on my face?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

"You... come inside." Bai Lihua opened the door to let him inside.

Once Su Yang was inside, Bai Lihua looked at him and said, "Did you reveal your identity as Senior Xiao or was it leaked? Because the entire world is talking about it! They know that you're Senior Xiao!"

Hearing Bai Lihua's worried tone, Su Yang smiled and said, "You're worried about me?"

"W-What? N-No... I am just..." Bai Lihua immediately blushed after hearing his words.

"Don't worry, I was the one who revealed my identity, and it was in front of the Cai Family and the Xiang Family, so I had already expected my identity to spread," Su Yang said afterward.

"The Xiang Family? One of the Four Great Families?" Bai Lihua raised her eyebrows.

Su Yang nodded, and he said, "Anyway, even if the world knows of my identity, nothing is going to happen to me, so you can calm down and focus on your alchemy, and speaking of your alchemy, how's your progress?"

"Well, I can concoct over 20 different Elementary-grade pills with similar results to the Minor Spirit Refreshment Pill," she said.

"20 pills in a month, huh? That's pretty amazing even for you," Su Yang praised her with a nonchalant expression, and he continued, "At this rate, you can start concocting Profound-grade pills next month."

"Really? That's great!" Bai Lihua expressed her excitement, almost like a child who received good grades for a test.

"What are you going to teach me today, Su Yang?" she asked him sometime later.

"I taught the other disciples a flame controlling technique for their alchemy flames, but you are still too new and inexperienced to learn it, so I am just going to continue teaching you the basics. Once you can start concocting Profound-grade pills with results similar to Elementary-grade pills, I will start teaching you that technique."

Bai Lihua nodded and said, "Then let's get started. My pill cauldron is still hot since I was concocting a pill not long before your arrival."

Once they entered the pill room, Bai Lihua began concocting new recipes that she was not used to whilst Su Yang watched her every movement and corrected any mistakes Bai Lihua made afterward.

The two of them continued this for the next three days.

Three days later, Su Yang said, "I'll leave you alone for now and come back next week."

Bai Lihua nodded, and then she said, "By the way, regarding that thing you asked me to do, I have told the disciples, and they seemed very eager to cultivate with you— at least that's what I got after seeing their reaction."

Su Yang smiled and said, "That's good to hear."

"I have a question, Su Yang," Bai Lihua said, and she continued, "If one of the disciples were to ask you to impregnate her, would you do it?"

"Now that's a question that I didn't expect," Su Yang chuckled.

"Well, I overheard some disciples talking about that, and I wanted to let you know ahead of time so you can prepare for it," she said.

Su Yang nodded, and then he suddenly said, "Once again, thank you for worrying about me. As a reward, how about a kiss?"

"W-What!?" Bai Lihua took a step back with a surprised look on her face after hearing his words.

"If you don't want it, that's fine, too," Su Yang said with a teasing smile on his face.

"I...I...I..." After stuttering many times and failing to speak, Bai Lihua decided to respond with a bashful head nod, her face flushed with redness.

A moment later, Su Yang gently touched up her chin before lifting her head and kissing her on the lips.

"Mmm..."

Bai Lihua felt an indescribable feeling overwhelm her heart as she savored Su Yang's gentle kiss, feeling as though it would burst out of her heart at any moment.

A few seconds later, Su Yang removed his lips and said, "Then, I'll see you again next week."

However, Bai Lihua did not respond to him and remained standing there with a blank expression on her face, looking dazed, and she stayed in that position even long after Su Yang left the scene.

Many minutes later, Bai Lihua finally moved, and she touched her lips with her fingers before mumbling in a low voice, "Does this mean he accepts my feelings for him? But if that was the case, why didn't he do anything else to me?"

Feeling excited yet puzzled at the same time, Bai Lihua decided to concoct more pills to clear her mind, but it took her many hours before she could concentrate on alchemy again.

Chapter 740 Liquid of Fertility

After leaving Bai Lihua's house and the Heavenly Swan Sect, Su Yang went to the Cai Family to pick up Cai Yan.

Before Su Yang's arrival, Cai Yan's parents approached her, who was peacefully studying the technique Su Yang gave her to pass time until he picked her up.

"Mother? Father? Do you need something from me?" Cai Yan lowered the scroll to look at them.

Their parents looked at each other for a moment before Cai Yan's mother extended her arms with a smile on her face and a small box in her grasp.

"Here, Yan'er. This is a gift for you," she said to her.

"What is it?" Cai Yan accepted the box with a curious look on her face.

Hearing her question, her father spoke, "It's a medicine known as Liquid of Fertility, and it'll greatly enhance your chances of being fertilized. Drink it before you do 'that' with Su Yang, and make sure he releases his white stuff inside your body."

"You... You want me to conceive a child with Su Yang?" Cai Yan looked at her parents with a speechless expression on her face, seemingly in disbelief. Never in her life did she expect her parents to be so supportive— even aggressive for her, especially when it was related with another man, as they would usually keep her away from other men.

"Of course we would want to see our grandchildren! Aren't you and Su Yang partners? What's wrong with bearing his child? You're already a woman, Yan'er. Most women around your age have already experienced giving birth."

"B-But this is too sudden... And Su Yang and I aren't really like that..." Cai Yan said to them in a dumbfounded voice.

"You're not? Then what are you two? Don't tell me you're giving your body to a man you have no relationship with— that you don't even love?" Her mother quickly frowned.

"Well..."

Since she didn't want to explain to them, Cai Yan said, "I understand... I will ask Su Yang if he wants to conceive a child with me..."

Sometime later, Su Yang arrived at the Cai Family.

"Welcome, Su Yang. Our daughter is already prepared to head to the Profound Blossom Sect with you." Cai Yan's mother greeted him at the door.

A few moments later, Cai Yan appeared before him.

"Please take care of our daughter, Su Yang," Cai Yan's parents lowered their bodies to bow to him.

"Please take care of me, Master..." Cai Yan followed her parents and bowed to him.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Don't worry, I won't treat her any less than perfect."

Sometime later, Su Yang boarded the flying boat with Cai Yan before returning to the Profound Blossom Sect.

Once they had arrived at the Profound Blossom Sect, Su Yang showed Cai Yan her living quarters and said, "This will be your new home for now until you decide to leave."

"Thank you, Master." Cai Yan bowed to him again.

"If you are ready to begin cultivating, just let me know," Su Yang said.

After a moment of silence, Cai Yan said, "I am ready to cultivate now, Master."

However, Su Yang said to her with an apologetic look on his face, "I'm sorry, but I have already appointments with other disciples, and it'll take at least 6 hours. I'll come to see you as soon as I am done with the others."

Cai Yan nodded and said, "Don't worry about it, Master. There's no need to apologize since it was my decision to come here."

"Then I'll see you in a few hours."

After Su Yang left, Cai Yan settled down in her new home and took some time to familiarize herself with the new scenery and environment before she started studying the alchemy technique again.

Time passed by in a flash and before she knew it, many hours had passed, and Su Yang returned to her living quarters.

"We can do this tomorrow if you'd like, Master. It's already getting dark, and you have already been cultivating for the entire day," Cai Yan said to him.

Su Yang chuckled before speaking, "I do this for a living— there's no way a few hours with the disciples would tire me out."

Hearing his words, Cai Yan nodded and said, "Please come inside, Master."

Sometime later, they entered Cai Yan's room that was already filled with her unique scent.

"Um... Master... I have something to ask of you..." Cai Yan suddenly said to him after they sat down on the bed, acting a little fidgety and out of character.

Su Yang looked at her with a smile and said, "You don't need to tell me anything, I already know about the Liquid of Fertility that's inside your robes. Did your parents tell you to bear my child?"

Cai Yan looked at him with a surprised face before nodding her head in a dazed manner.

"Y-Yes... They did... But how did you...?"

"The Liquid of Fertility has quite the strong smell, after all. I have known about it ever since I picked you up," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"S-Since that long?" Cai Yan's jaw dropped wide open.

After a moment of silence, Cai Yan spoke, "Then... do you think you'll be able to...? I completely understand if you don't want to since I am only your disciple and we're doing this to improve my cultivation..."

After another moment of silence, Su Yang spoke, "I don't mind."

"R-Really?" Cai Yan looked at him with wide eyes.

Su Yang nodded and continued, "But I won't be by your side forever, so if you don't mind bearing my child while knowing that I won't be able to take care of it, I'll agree to your request."

"..." Cai Yan became silent.

After a long moment of silence, Cai Yan nodded with a resolute expression on her face, "This is mostly my parents' wish because they want an heir for the family, and they'll probably want to raise the child by themselves anyway, and I want to focus on alchemy. Therefore, I won't ask you to take responsibility."

Chapter 741 Training Cai Yan

"Since that's the case, I'll impregnate you. However, I won't do it today," Su Yang said to Cai Yan.

And he continued, "The only reason the Profound Blossom Sect disciples were able to improve their cultivation so quickly was because they had absorbed my Yang Qi, so if you don't absorb my Yang Qi, it'll make the entire process pointless."

"Furthermore, if I impregnate you now, it'll slow down your training a few months later, even halt it completely until after you give birth. Therefore, I will impregnate you once you have reached the Earth Spirit Realm and finish most of our lectures."

Cai Yan nodded, "I understand. Then I'll save the Liquid of Fertility until..."

"I don't need the Liquid of Fertility to impregnate you. Just throw that trash away," Su Yang suddenly said.

If his partners needed something like the Liquid of Fertility to get impregnated by him, it would be a slap to his face, who has spent many years learning and mastering the technique that allowed him to control his Yang Qi and impregnate his partners at will with 100 percent success rate.

"In fact, you can give it to me. I'll dispose of it for you."

"O-Okay..." Cai Yan nodded with a dazed look before handing him a small bottle of clear liquid.

Once the Liquid of Fertility was in his hands, Su Yang closed his hand and crushed the bottle before using his alchemy flames to erase all of its contents until there was nothing left.

Cai Yan was speechless after witnessing Su Yang destroy the Liquid of Fertility so viciously, acting almost like he was enemies with it or something.

After destroying the Liquid of Fertility, Su Yang looked at Cai Yan before handing her another scroll.

"What's this?" she asked him.

"That is a cultivation technique for Dual Cultivators. It's really no different from a normal cultivation technique except for a few extra steps that allow you to absorb the Yang Qi in your body. If you use this technique to absorb the Yang Qi after our cultivation, it'll be more effective than just absorbing it normally," Su Yang explained to her.

"It won't take long to learn it— an hour at most even for people with average talents. If it's you, it'll take even less. We'll begin our cultivation once you have learned it."

Cai Yan nodded and immediately began studying the cultivation technique.

Meanwhile, Su Yang sat on the bed and began cultivating.

About twenty minutes later, Cai Yan placed the technique down and said, "Master, I have learned the technique."

Su Yang opened his eyes and immediately began loosening his robes, "Then let's begin."

Cai Yan blushed a little when she saw Su Yang's smooth skin and flawless figure for the first time.

"Come over here," Su Yang said to her.

Cai Yan then stood up and loosened her own robes before approaching him.

A few moments later, Cai Yan laid on the bed with her body completely naked and Su Yang staring intimately at her.

"As expected of a young lady from a noble family— you have a very luscious body," Su Yang praised her with a smile on his face before using his fingers and running them down her body.

"Mmm..."

Cai Yan immediately tightened her jaws to resist moaning.

"Don't hold it in and let it out— you'll feel much better that way." Su Yang said to her as his fingers reached the bare slit between her legs.

He proceeded to tease the area around the slit until it was soaking wet, causing Cai Yan to moan continuously, "Aaahh~!"

Once her little sister was completely wet and drooling with Yin Qi, Su Yang spread her legs wide open before kissing her slit with his lips and skillfully licking all of the sweet juices with his tongue.

Cai Yan moaned even louder after feeling Su Yang's tongue licking all over her little sister, feeling an unfamiliar feeling spread throughout her body.

"It's coming! It's coming out!"

Cai Yan exclaimed before releasing a long flow of Yin Qi from her slit.

A few moments later once Cai Yan's body stopped twitching, Su Yang began rubbing his hot and stiff rod between her wet slit, teasing the swollen pink pearl that had been aroused for a while now.

"Master... stick it inside me already... I cannot hold it any longer!" Cai Yan suddenly pleaded with a lustful expression on her elegant face.

Once his dragon was soaked with Cai Yan's slippery substance, Su Yang poked her sealed entrance with just the tip, spreading it wide open.

"So painful!" Cai Yan sucked in a breath of cold air after feeling an intense pain between her legs for the first time in her life.

"I'm going to go deeper now," Su Yang said to her a moment later.

"Go ahead." Cai Yan nodded.

Su Yang then pushed his meatstick deeper into her cave— until his rod was knocking her at the end of the cave.

Meanwhile, Cai Yan clenched her jaws to endure the pain, and she could even feel the sensation of her own virgin blood sliding down her skin.

"Are you okay?" Su Yang asked her afterward.

"I'm... fine..." she nodded with a resolute expression.

Su Yang nodded, and he began moving his hips, thrusting his meatstick into her slipper yet tight cave and pulling it back out a second later after reaching the end of her cave.

Very quickly, Cai Yan stopped feeling pain and could no longer feel anything else besides pleasure.

"Aaaah~!"

"Aaaaaahn~!"

"Mmmm~!"

Cai Yan tossed away her graceful character and began moaning without restraints, fully indulging herself in the pleasure that overwhelmed her inexperienced body.

Many minutes later, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into her body, filling every nook and cranny inside her cave.

"Go ahead and cultivate the Yang Qi in your body now. Once you're done, we'll do it again, and we'll continue doing this until you can no longer move. If you want to reach the Earth Spirit Realm quickly, you'll have to endure this like the disciples had," Su Yang said to her afterward.

Cai Yan nodded and began absorbing the Yang Qi in her body.

Chapter 742 Leaving Behind His Legacy

After spending an hour absorbing the Yang Qi in her body, Cai Yan could already feel her cultivation rising significantly, greatly shocking her.

'This is much more effective than I'd expected!' Cai Yan cried inwardly. It was no wonder the Profound Blossom Sect disciples managed to reach the True Spirit Realm and Earth Spirit Realm in just half a year from the Elementary Spirit Realm!

At this rate, she might really achieve the Earth Spirit Realm in half a year if not even quicker!

"Looks like you are done," Su Yang said after seeing Cai Yan open her eyes, and he continued, "Let's continue cultivating."

Cai Yan nodded, and she laid on the bed before spreading her slender legs wide open.

Su Yang inserted his rod into her cave and began cultivating again.

They continued this process until the entire night passed.

Once it was morning, Su Yang left Cai Yan's living quarters while Cai Yan rested in her room with her body completely exhausted.

"Welcome back, darling. Did you cultivate with someone new yesterday? I can sense unfamiliar Yin Qi on you." Tang Lingxi said to him from the bed.

Su Yang nodded, "Yes, it's one of my disciples— the one with the Jade Flames. She wanted to reach the Earth Spirit Realm as soon as possible, so she decided to cultivate with me in order to do so."

"What a dedicated young girl," Tang Lingxi said, and she continued, "Did something else happen? I can feel it."

Su Yang approached her with a smile and sat on the edge of the bed before speaking, "I really cannot hide anything from you, huh?"

After a moment of silence, he continued, "Cai Yan, she asked me if I can impregnate her, and I agreed."

"Again? At this rate, you'll really impregnate every woman in this world before you return to the Divine Heavens." Tang Lingxi chuckled.

"But what's wrong with that? Do you not want to?"

"No, that's not it. It just feels weird to impregnate somebody I don't plan on bringing to the Divine Heavens. When I agreed to impregnate Wu Jingjing and Zhu Mengyi over a year ago, I didn't want to take responsibility because I was afraid of bringing them to the Divine Heavens, but I had at least thought about it, and they were passionate about it. However, with Cai Yan... it is a little different."

"Furthermore, there are no feelings between Cai Yan and myself, and we're only cultivating so she can reach the Earth Spirit Realm quicker— it's merely training."

"I see... I understand what you mean, but that's quite common in the cultivation world. There are many women out there who conceive with men they don't even know because they want a talented child, and that is the number one priority for most young ladies from big families out there." Tang Lingxi said.

"Well, I know that, but it still feels weird doing it myself, as I have never willingly impregnated a woman before coming to this world," Su Yang said.

"If you don't like it, why don't you just refuse? I can imagine plenty more women will be coming to you for the same purpose in the future once they learn about it."

"Who said I don't like it? I have always wanted to have my own legacy, but I was too afraid to actually do it. Even though I won't be taking responsibility for these children, they are still my children nevertheless. Perhaps in the future, once everything has calmed down and I deal with my problems in the Divine Heavens, I will return to this place and see if they still want my help."

"What if thousands of years have passed by then?" Tang Lingxi asked them.

"Whether it be thousands of years or millions of years from now, my legacy will still exist within their bloodline, which is more than enough for me," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

Sometime later, he said, "Anyways, enough about me. What about you, Lingxi? How long do you have left in that body?"

"Three months at most, I guess," Tang Lingxi looked spoke while looking at her own hands.

"Three months, huh. Well, is there anything you want to do before you return to the Divine Heavens?" Su Yang then asked her.

"Nothing particularly— Or, to be precise, nothing that I want to do can be done."

Tang Lingxi looked at Su Yang and continued, "I am satisfied with just being around you for now. Once you return to the Divine Heavens, I'll make up for it."

Su Yang nodded with a smile on his face, and the two of them proceeded to talk to each other about random things for the rest of the day.

The following day, Su Yang left the Yin Yang Pavilion to fulfill his duties as the Sect Master of the Profound Blossom Sect by cultivating with the disciples.

Once he'd returned to the Yin Yang Pavilion at the end of the day, he was approached by Liu Lanzhi, who said to him, "Su Yang, there has been an influx of people coming to the Profound Blossom Sect lately—mostly to see you, and the sect elders have been refusing them, but they are getting overwhelmed. Do you think you can do something about it?"

"This must be due to my identity as the Alchemy Master being revealed." Su Yang nodded and said a moment later, "Okay, I'll do something about it tomorrow."

"One more thing..." Liu Lanzhi pointed to her stomach and said, "It's almost empty, and I have a few questions regarding the cultivation technique you gave me."

Su Yang nodded and said, "Okay, let me fill you back up before we talk about the technique."

Sometime later, Su Yang followed Liu Lanzhi back into her room, and they began cultivating with each other. After filling Liu Lanzhi's cave with Yang Qi again, Su Yang began answering all of her questions regarding the technique.

The following morning, Su Yang left the Yin Yang Pavilion again, but he was not going to any disciples' house. Instead, he went to the entrance of the sect, where a crowd of guests could be seen waiting outside.

Chapter 743 A Story of an Immortal Living in a Distant World

"S-Su Yang!" The disciples that had been promoted to sect elder after the Regional Tournament expressed excitement after seeing Su Yang appear before them.

"I'll take care of this," Su Yang said to them as he flew above the entrance and hovered before tens of thousands of people that gathered in front of the Profound Blossom Sect.

"Look over there! That's Su Yang!"

"Su Yang?! Did someone just say Su Yang?! Where?!"

"Su Yang! I am from the Xin Family and I have with me—"

"The Xiao Family from the Southern Region would like to have an audience with you—"

"This is the..."

"Su Yang..."

"I am..."

The noises there quickly erupted after someone mentioned the name 'Su Yang', and everybody there turned to look at the sky.

"Quiet down." Su Yang suddenly spoke in a calm voice, yet it boomed louder than the sound of thunder followed by an intense pressure that filled the atmosphere there, immediately turning the place dead silent.

Once the place was completely silent, Su Yang spoke in a calm voice, "I understand that everyone is here to see me, but I am currently not seeing any guests. However, I will be at the major gathering assembled by the Xie Family to answer any questions that you may all have. Until then, stop gathering around the Profound Blossom Sect like a bunch of rats. It's bothering my disciples, which bothers me."

"However, if you're not here for me but something else, you can remain here, and one of our sect elders will be with you shortly. That's all I have to say."

Without even waiting for any responses, Su Yang returned to the sect and said to the young and inexperienced sect elders, "That should take care of the problems."

"Thank you, Su Yang!" They bowed to him.

Su Yang nodded and continued, "As a small reward for having to deal with this, I will visit you ladies later today."

The sect elders' expression brightened even more after hearing his words, and they nodded with excitement, "We'll be waiting for you!"

Once Su Yang left the scene, the sect elders returned to dealing with the guests that came to the Profound Blossom Sect for official business, whilst over 90 percent of the crowd disappeared after Su Yang's little speech, allowing the sect elders to finally breathe.

Afterward, Su Yang went back to his daily routine and cultivated with the disciples until night, where he would continue to cultivate with his women if they wanted.

Time passed quickly, and a week later, Su Yang left the Profound Blossom Sect to head to the Heavenly Swan Sect to lecture Bai Lihua again.

"Your speed has increased since my last visit. It took you a month to master 20 recipes last time, whilst it took you only a week to master 10 Elementary-grade pills this time," Su Yang praised Bai Lihua after seeing her progress. "At this rate, you'll master all of the Elementary-grade pills I gave you by next week."

"Thank you, Su Yang. None of this would've been possible without you," she said.

Sometime later, Su Yang continued lecturing Bai Lihu, spending an entire day with her before leaving her living quarters.

However, right as Su Yang approached the door and prepared to leave, he suddenly stopped moving, as he noticed Bai Lihua's fidgeting movements.

Seeing this, Su Yang said with a smile on his face, "Do you want another kiss before I leave?"

Hearing his words, Bai Lihua's face flushed with redness, but she nodded her head nevertheless.

Su Yang approached her a moment later before giving Bai Lihua a kiss on the lips.

"Then I'll see you again next week."

Su Yang waved to her before leaving.

However, instead of leaving the Heavenly Swan Sect and returning straight to the Profound Blossom Sect, Su Yang went to another building inside the Heavenly Swan Sect.

Knock *Knock*

Su Yang knocked on the door to this building a moment later.

While he waited for the person to open the door, Su Yang pondered, 'Although it's a bit early, I will have to reveal the truth to her sooner or later, and in her case, it would be better for her to learn the truth sooner so that she has sufficient time to think about it.'

The door opened sometime later, and Su Yin appeared before him.

"It really is you, brother! I could smell your scent even before I got close to the door!" Su Yin greeted him with a bright smile, as this is the first time that Su Yang has approached her.

"Hello, Su Yin. Can I come inside?"

"Of course! I would never turn you away!" Su Yin said to him.

Sometime later, once they were inside and seated, Su Yin asked him while sitting right beside him on the couch, "What brings you here, brother? Are you perhaps here about your identity as the Alchemy Master being revealed? If you're here to apologize for lying to me on that day, then I don't need it. I understand why you lied to me on that day about your identity."

Su Yang shook his head and said, "No, this has nothing to do with my alias as the Alchemy Master. This is about me... you... it's about us, and our future."

"It's about our future...?" Su Yin swallowed nervously after seeing the serious expression on his face.

After a moment of silence, Su Yang said, "There's something you should know about me, Su Yin. I wanted to tell you this before, but I didn't want to hurt you, who was overwhelmed with joy that you have reunited with your brother."

"What is it, brother? I can handle it— I promise."

Su Yang nodded and said, "Before I tell you everything, allow me to tell you a little story— a story of an Immortal living in a distant world."

Su Yang proceeded to tell Su Yin about his life as an Immortal in the Divine Heavens and how he experienced reincarnation without explicitly stating that he was the Immortal.

Chapter 744 Su Yin's Decision

After telling Su Yin his background without revealing that it was him, Su Yang asked her, "What do you think?"

"What do I think...?" Su Yin raised her eyebrows in a puzzled manner, completely puzzled as to why Su Yang would tell her such a story in the first place.

After a moment of silence, she said, "Well... It's definitely an interesting story, and that person sounds like a person that brother would become when he grows older... However, I don't know what else to think of it. I'm sorry, brother..."

"There is no need for you to apologize, Su Yin," Su Yang said to her with a smile, and he continued, "Now back to talking about us..."

"Do you remember when our father sealed my memories and kicked me out of the family?"

"Of course! I would never forget that, nor will I forgive father for doing such a horrible thing to you!" Su Yin quickly nodded.

"Well, after I became a disciple of the Profound Blossom Sect, a few things happened, and I was nearly killed. However, because of that near-death experience, something awakened inside me."

Su Yang then looked at her with a serious expression and said, "I... I am completely different from the 'Su Yang' before he got kicked out of the family, don't you think so too, Su Yin?"

"I-if you say it like that, then yes, you have definitely changed. However, I don't think it's a bad thing at all! Although you were lovely before, I think the current you is even better! After all, you were not this talkative before, and I feel like I am closer to you now that we can communicate like this!"

"Is that so...? I am somewhat relieved to hear that," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

However, his smile disappeared a moment later, replaced by a serious look, and he said, "Su Yin, I want you to listen to me very carefully and let me finish speaking before you react, okay?"

"O-Okay..." Su Yin nodded her head in a nervous manner, wondering why Su Yang was being so serious.

"The reason I am so different is simply because I am a different person. However, it's not in the way that you might be thinking right now."

Despite seeing Su Yin's wide eyes, Su Yang continued, "The story I told you about not long ago— about the Immortal who reincarnated. That Immortal is me, and I was reincarnated as your brother in this life."

"However, for some reason, I didn't have memories of my past life right after birth, and it was only after my near-death experience at the Profound Blossom Sect that brought back my memories. Therefore, while I am your brother, I am also not your brother at the same time."

Su Yang turned silent afterward, allowing Su Yin to process and comprehend everything he'd just told her. However, after many minutes of silence, Su Yin remained speechless.

After ten minutes of pure silence, Su Yin finally opened her mouth to speak, "Although I am still trying to understand some things, I think I get the gist of it. I thought at first that you were going to tell me that you were not my brother all along, but it turns out that was not the case."

"And while you may no longer be the brother that I loved, you are still the brother that I have grown to love even more and that is all that matters to me."

"So you don't mind that I am not the brother that you've loved since the beginning?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows, feeling a little surprised by how well Su Yin was handling the situation and truth.

"Yes, I don't mind. After all, you're still my brother, right?" Su Yin said.

"That's right," Su Yang nodded.

"Then that's all it matters!"

Su Yang chuckled and said, "It seems like I have underestimated you, Su Yin, and I rarely misjudge women. As expected of my little sister."

However, despite the smile on Su Yin's face, Su Yang could sense a feeling of uncertainty and worry deep within Su Yin's heart, so he stood up and said, "Follow me."

Su Yin nodded and followed Su Yang.

A few moments later, they entered one of the bedrooms.

"Brother... this is?"

"There's still one more thing that I haven't told you yet, Su Yin." Su Yang turned to look at her and continued, "Within two years, I am going to leave this world and return back to my own world— the Divine Heavens."

"L-Leave? What do you mean by that, brother?! Are you going to leave me all alone again?! I don't want you to leave!" Su Yin immediately cried out loud.

"I know you don't want me to leave, but I also cannot stay here no matter what. I have things that need to be done in the other world. Therefore I have a proposal for you. Do you want to come with me to the Divine Heavens?"

Su Yin's eyes widened with surprise.

"You... want me to come with you? What about father?" Su Yin asked him.

"Unfortunately, he'll have to stay in this world. Even if I asked him, he won't agree to abandon the Su Family. I am only giving you a choice right now. If you want to follow me, then I will take you with me. If you want to stay in this world, I will also respect that choice."

"And while I cannot give you my Family Seal because it doesn't work on those with the same bloodline, I can still treat you as a family member, and not as a sister, but as my woman. What do you think?"

"I... I want to follow you, brother! No matter where you go, I will go with you! I have learned from your disappearance and our separation that I will not be able to live without you in my life! Please! Let me follow you!"

Chapter 745 A Lot of Practice and Swallowing

After hearing Su Yin's decision, Su Yang nodded and said to her, "Come over here."

Su Yin nodded, and she approached him before entering his embrace.

A few moments later, Su Yang removed her clothes, revealing her petite and flawless body to him.

"Brother..." Su Yin stared at him with a passionate gaze.

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "Call me Su Yang from now on."

Su Yin nodded, "Okay, Su Yang..."

Although it felt very weird at first, it had this oddly satisfying tone to it, almost like she'd always wanted to say his name.

After laying Su Yin on the bed, Su Yang began eating her small, wet cave, savoring her pink meat for many minutes without stopping.

"Aaahh~!"

"Mmmn~!"

"Aaahn!"

Su Yin moaned loudly as her body trembled with delight and her heart overwhelmed with joy.

Many minutes later, Su Yang revealed his stiff dragon and inserted it into Su Yin's thigh cave, spreading her inner walls wide apart.

A moment later, Su Yang began moving his hips, thrusting his rod in and out of her cave and knocking on the end of her cave with the tip.

"Aaaaaah~!" Su Yin's body gushed with Yin Qi a few minutes later, and Su Yang released his Yang Qi into her body simultaneously.

After they both stopped climaxing, Su Yang continued moving again without giving Su Yin any time to rest.

Of course, Su Yin didn't complain and accepted everything Su Yang did to her.

Many hours later, Su Yang released his Yang Qi inside Su Yin for the 100th time, whilst Su Yin climaxed uncontrollably.

Sometime later, Su Yin said, "Thank you, Su Yang, for accepting me despite our relationship..."

Su Yang smiled and said, "Don't even mention it. And to tell you the truth, I still cannot see you as my sister since I have lived for so long without one, and I have only known you for a little over a year not including the time before I recovered my memories."

"By the way, do you want to stay here in the Heavenly Swan Sect or move to the Profound Blossom Sect with me?" Su Yang asked her sometime later.

"I will stay here for now. I still need to talk to my Master about leaving the sect in the future, after all," Su Yin said.

"Okay, then I will see you later."

"See you later, Su Yang!"

Once Su Yang left her living quarters, Su Yin curled up on the bed like a caterpillar and began giggling to herself in a silly manner.

"Hehe... brother accepted me as his woman! Hehehe..."

Meanwhile, Su Yang returned to the Profound Blossom Sect, where he continued to cultivate with the other disciples.

A few days after Su Yang spoke with Su Yin, two beautiful women with similar features appeared before him as he returned to the Yin Yang Pavilion.

"S-Su Yang!"

"Fang Zhelan? Fang Xiaoru? What are you doing at the Yin Yang Pavilion? Were you looking for me?" Su Yang asked them, and he continued, "If you needed to see me, you could've contacted me through the communication jade slip."

"I'm sorry, Su Yang, but we came here for another reason..." Fang Zhelan said with a weird look on her face.

"Hm?" Su Yang narrowed his eyes, and then his powerful nose picked up a certain scent lingering on their bodies.

"I see... you two went to see the babies, huh?" Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"H-How did you know that?!" Fang Xiaoru exclaimed.

"I can smell their scent lingering on your body, so I can only assume that you had them in your arms at some point," Su Yang said.

"Heavens... Just how powerful is your nose? If only I was born with such a powerful nose," Fang Xiaoru mumbled in a dazed voice.

"You think I was born with this nose?" Su Yang chuckled.

"Huh? What do you mean by that?" Fang Xiaoru looked at him with a puzzled face.

"I wasn't born with a strong nose. I practiced a technique that strengthened my senses, especially my nose since it's really convenient for alchemy," Su Yang revealed the truth to them.

Sometime later, Fang Zhelan said, "By the way, congratulations, Su Yang. You have two very beautiful daughters."

"Thank you," Su Yang said with a smile.

"Anyway, since you ladies are already here, why don't we cultivate? It's been a while since we've done it, after all."

Fang Zhelan quickly nodded and said, "I was also hoping for that when I came here. What do you think, Xiaoru? Do you want to cultivate together with us again?"

"I do!" Fang Xiaoru immediately nodded her head.

"Let's do it in this place since you are already here," Su Yang then led the Feng sisters into one of the empty rooms inside the Yin Yang Pavilion.

Sometime later, Su Yang laid on the large bed while the sisters removed their clothes and crawled onto the bed with him.

"No matter how many times I see your thing, it always impresses me..." Fang Zhelan said as she kneeled beside Su Yang's legs with her slender fingers wrapped around Su Yang's thick dragon.

A few moments later, Fang Zhelan began working on Su Yang's rod with her mouth by giving him a deep fellatio while Fang Xiaoru laid between Su Yang's legs on her stomach and licked and sucked on his jewels.

"Mmmm..."

"Mmm~"

"Mmmmm..."

The Fang sisters made lustful noises with their mouths as they savored Su Yang's meat to their heart's content.

Many minutes later, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into Fang Zhelan's mouth, which she swallowed without any problems despite the excessive amount that flowed into her mouth and throat.

"Looks like you've gotten used to swallowing," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"Yes, but it took a lot of practice and swallowing to get used to it." Fang Zhelan laughed in a graceful manner despite her vulgar appearance.

"Let me try next," Fang Xiaoru said as she switched positions with Fang Zhelan and began sucking on Su Yang's rod with passion.

Chapter 746 The Sisters' Decision

"Mmm..."

"Mmmmm..."

"Mmm..."

While Fang Xiaoru sucked on Su Yang's rod, Fang Zhelan said to him, "Su Yang, do you have any plans for the future? Now that the Profound Blossom Sect is pretty much one of the top sects in the Eastern Continent, what are you going to do with it in the future?"

Hearing her question, Su Yang said, "I am not going to do anything because it'll be up to Liu Lanzhi what she wants to do with the sect. After all, I am not going to be in this place forever."

"Eh? Are you going somewhere?" Fang Zhelan asked him.

"Oh, right, I haven't told you yet. I'll be leaving the Profound Blossom Sect in less than two years from now. In fact, I won't remain in the Eastern Continent or this world for that matter."

"Huh?"

Fang Zhelan looked at him with a dazed look, and even Fang Xiaoru stopped sucking on his rod and stared at him in silence.

"W-What do you mean by that, Su Yang? Where are you going to go?" Fang Zhelan asked him a moment later.

Su Yang closed his eyes for a moment before speaking, "I should have told you two about this long ago, but I... I am not who you think I am."

"This is going to sound weird to you but I am actually living my second life..."

Su Yang proceeded to explain to the Fang sisters his real identity and his previous life as an Immortal.

Sometime later, Fang Zhelan spoke with a dumbfounded look on her face, "I already knew that you were too mature and experienced for your age, but to think that you would be... I don't even know what to say right now..."

"Are you disappointed?" Su Yang asked them.

"Why would I be disappointed, Su Yang? You are still the same person I've known and loved since the beginning and nothing will change that. However, I am slightly saddened to hear that you will leave this world. What will I do without you?"

"My elder sister is right... Even though I have known you for far less time compared to her, your background doesn't matter to me because it's not like you've suddenly become a different person."

"..."

Su Yang turned silent after hearing their words, and after a moment of silence, he spoke, "Zhelan... do you remember what you told me not long ago?"

"What I said to you...?" Fang Zhelan raised her slender eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

"During the Regional Tournament, you said that you want to be with me forever; that you want to remain in my embrace; that you were not worthy; that your body belongs to me. Do you still think that now?"

"I do! I still think that even now!" Fang Zhelan immediately nodded her head after realizing what Su Yang was talking about.

"Good... then as for what I said to you... that you are worthy... Fang Zhelan, do you want to come with me to the Divine Heavens?"

Su Yang then turned to look at Fang Xiaoru and said with a handsome smile on his face, "Of course, you can come too if you want."

"C-Can I really come with you, Su Yang? Even though I am...?" Fang Zhelan trembled after hearing his words, and on her face was a look of disbelief.

"Of course. I have already told you before that you're not dirty. As a Dual Cultivator, it's only natural for us to have many partners in our lifetime. The only thing that matters is whether you are willing to spend the rest of your life with me and nobody else or not."

"I am willing! I am willing, Su Yang! Even if I were to look for other partners, I can no longer be satisfied by anyone else but you! Furthermore, I have already offered my everything to you!" Fang Zhelan said to him in an emotional voice and teary eyes.

Su Yang nodded, and then he turned to look at Fang Xiaoru, "What about you, Xiaoru? Even though we haven't known each other for long, I really enjoy your company, especially when you're with Zhelan. It'd be a crime to separate such a perfect pair."

"I also want to follow you alongside my elder sister, Su Yang! In fact, I have already decided to follow you no matter where you go ever since I resolved myself to leave the Fang Family!"

After hearing the sister's words, Su Yang then said, "Since that's the case, I am going to make you two my women— my official women."

He proceeded to tell them about the Family Seal and the rules within the family.

"What do you think? Are you willing to become a part of the Su Family and become my woman?"

Fang Zhelan and Feng Xiaoru exchanged glances with each other before turning to look at Su Yang and speaking simultaneously— "We are willing!"

"Good, then let's continue to have some fun before I give you my Family Seal," Su Yang said to them.

The next moment, Fang Xiaoru returned to sucking on Su Yang's rod, and it felt entirely different for Su Yang compared to just a few minutes ago, almost like something had changed within Fang Xiaoru.

Meanwhile, Fang Zhelan was directed by Su Yang to sit on his face so he could savor her lower lips.

Feng Zhelan obeyed his desires and sat on his face a moment later with her lower lips directly on Su Yang's lips.

Su Yang then grabbed her soft buttocks and began licking her beautiful slit with his tongue.

"Aaaah~!"

Fang Zhelan released a delightful moan while her body felt tingly all over.

Sometime later, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into Fang Xiaoru's mouth whilst Fang Zhelan released her Yin Qi inside Su Yang's mouth.

"Mmm!" Fang Xiaoru tried her best to swallow the Yang Qi like Fang Zhelan, but alas, she could only endure it for a few seconds before she removed her mouth from his rod, allowing the excess Yang Qi to shoot all over her face.

Chapter 747 Like a Group of Housewives

"Looks like I still need a lot of practice..." Fang Xiaoru sighed as she wiped the Yang Qi off her face before licking it off her fingers in an innocent yet erotic manner.

"Don't worry, you'll have plenty of time to practice in the future," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

A few moments later, Fang Xiaoru inserted Su Yang's rod into her tight cave and began riding him like a horse.

Meanwhile, Su Yang continued to eat Fang Zhelan's pink meat while moving his hips to please Fang Xiaoru at the same time.

"Aaahh~!"

"Aaahh~"

"My stomach... feels so full~" Fang Xiaoru moaned loudly.

Many minutes later, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into Fang Xiaoru's cave, filling every nook and cranny inside her body.

"This is... the Family Seal?" Fang Xiaoru rubbed the Family Seal that had suddenly appeared on her body with great interest.

"Yes, but I still need to activate it later," Su Yang said.

A few moments later, Fang Xiaoru laid on the bed to recover, and Su Yang sat up on the bed with Fang Zhelan in his embrace and sitting on his lap.

Once his rod went inside Fang Zhelan's slippery cave with ease, Su Yang began massaging Fang Zhelan's breasts while she moved her hips and rode him in a similar fashion as Fang Xiaoru had.

Pap! Pap! Pap!

Erotic noises filled the room as Su Yang's thick rod slammed into Fang Zhelan's wet cave, sounding as though someone was dancing on a wet puddle.

"Aaaaah~"

Fang Zhelan moaned loudly as Su Yang's dragon head knocked on the end of her cave, feeling as though it was trying to dig an even deeper hole in her body.

After many minutes of intense pounding, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into Fang Zhelan's cave, creating a Family Seal on her body too.

After laying Fang Zhelan on the bed, Su Yang turned to look at Fang Xiaoru who'd just recovered her energy with a smile on his face.

Fang Xiaoru immediately understood the meaning behind his gaze and opened her legs wide open for him.

Su Yang then inserted his rod into her cave that was still filled with his Yang Qi, and he began pounding her yearning body, causing most of the Yang Qi in her cave to leak out only to fill it back up with his Yang Qi a few minutes later.

Half an hour later, Su Yang switched partners again, returning back to Fang Zhelan, and he would continue this until they cultivated for nearly the entire day.

By the end of the day, Su Yang had cultivated over 50 times with each of them.

"I cannot do it anymore... My body won't be able to handle it..." Fang Xiaoru said afterward.

"Although I can continue, I'll also stop here for today," Fang Zhelan spoke a moment later.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Let me activate your Family Seals before I leave you ladies alone."

He then bit a small hole in his finger before smearing some of his blood onto their Family Seal, activating it.

"Welcome to the family, Fang Zhelan, Fang Xiaoru. I'll introduce you to the others later," Su Yang said to them afterward.

"Thank you, Su Yang, for accepting me and Xiaoru..." Fang Zhelan said to him with a beautiful smile on her face. "I swear that I will continue to do my best from now on."

"Me, too! I promise that I will try my best to reach my elder sister's level of endurance as soon as possible so that I don't become a burden!" Fang Xiaoru said.

"There's no need to rush things, Xiaoru. As I'd said, you'll have plenty of time to practice in the future," Su Yang said to her.

"Anyway, it's already the next day, and I have appointments to fulfill with the disciples. I'll talk to you ladies later."

A few moments later, Su Yang left the room, leaving the sisters alone.

"Elder sister... Thank you..." Fang Xiaoru suddenly said to her.

"What for? I don't recall doing anything to deserve such words," Fang Zhelan raised her eyebrows.

"Thank you for leaving the family and coming to this place. If not for you, I would've never met Su Yang, and I would still be living a boring life at the Fang Family," Fang Xiaoru explained.

"There's no need to thank me for that, you silly. It was not as though I had planned on meeting Su Yang in this place. I left the Fang Family because I wanted to— it was a selfish decision of mine, so I cannot accept your gratitude. If you have to thank something, thank the heavens for allowing us to meet with Su Yang, and thank Su Yang for being the way he is."

After spending many minutes talking to each other as they recovered their strength, Fang Zhelan got off the bed and said, "I am going to wash my body."

"I'll help you, elder sister."

Fang Zhelan and Fang Xiaoru entered the bathroom a few moments later, and they assisted each other by washing each other's back.

Once their bodies were glistening and clean, the sisters dried themselves before leaving the bathroom.

However, to the sister's surprise, they were greeted by three extremely beautiful women when they returned to the room.

"Welcome to the family, Fang Zhelan, Fang Xiaoru." Wu Jingjing and the other girls said to them the moment they noticed their presence.

"Seniors..." The Fang sisters were speechless.

"You know, I have realized something today," Zhu Mengyi suddenly said, and she continued, "Although our children dislike strangers, they are oddly friendly with people who are related to Su Yang. Maybe they have the ability to tell whether someone qualifies to join the family or not."

"If that's true, our daughters are truly talented," Wu Jingjing chuckled.

"Anyway, because you girls were so close to us, we were able to feel your Family Seal being activated, so we came here to see who it was." Lian Li said to them, and she continued, "Though, we have already guessed your identities before even coming here."

Sometime later, the five ladies began talking to each other like a group of housewives, but they all belonged to the same family!

Chapter 748 But I Am Your Man

Another week has passed since Su Yang's previous lecture with Bai Lihua, thus he made his way back to the Heavenly Swan Sect to give Bai Lihua her 3rd lecture.

"Welcome, Su Yang," Bai Lihua greeted him at the door with an unusually bright expression on her beautiful face, and even someone blind would be able to tell her cheerful mood just by hearing her delightful voice.

"You seem happy, did something happen?" Su Yang entered her house with a smile.

"Of course! I have finally managed to master all Elementary-grade pills! Look! All of these are high-quality pills!" Bai Lihua handed him a storage pouch that contained over 100 high-quality Elementary-grade pills.

"I see... Congratulations, now we can finally start working on Profound-grade pills. However, before we start on those, I want you to learn the flame controlling technique I'd taught the others." Su Yang then handed her the technique.

"You can start studying it now; I'll be back soon."

"Huh? Where are you going?" Bai Lihua asked him.

"I promised you that I'd improve the formation protecting the Heavenly Swan Sect, right? Well, I am thinking about fulfilling that promise right now," he said to her.

"Oh! I nearly forgot about that! Do you need any help? If you need spirit stones, the Heavenly Swan Sect should be able to spare about 50 million spirit stones to strengthen the formation..."

"50 million spirit stones? You'd need at least 150 million spirit stones for what I am about to do. However, you don't have to worry about paying me 150 million spirit stones since the Profound Blossom Sect will foot the bill," Su Yang said to her.

"150 million spirit stones?! Are you sure? Even if you can afford it, allow me to at least relieve some of that burden for you! After all, this is my Heavenly Swan Sect!" Bai Lihua insisted.

"You may be the Sect Master of this place, but I am your man, so I will still foot the bill," Su Yang said with a calm expression on his face.

"Huh? What did you just say?" Bai Lihua's eyes immediately widened after hearing his words with a gawking expression on her beautiful face.

Did Su Yang just call himself her 'man'? Surely, she must have misheard him.

"I also promised you that I'd give an answer to your feelings if you finished all of the Elementary-grade pills, right? Or do you not like this answer?" Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"You... does that mean..." Bai Lihua was still in disbelief and asked him for confirmation.

"I'll give you a better answer once I return. For now, you should focus on the technique," Su Yang said before waving goodbye and leaving Bai Lihua alone.

"W-Why does he keep leaving me hanging like this?! Does he enjoy teasing me that much?!" Bai Lihua cried out loud after Su Yang left.

However, despite how Su Yang was dealing with the situation, Bai Lihua didn't feel annoyed or angry. In fact, the anticipation was only making her more excited.

'What is this feeling? I have never felt anything like this before!' Bai Lihua wondered to herself as she returned to her own room to study the technique Su Yang just handed her.

Meanwhile, Su Yang went to the center of the Heavenly Swan Sect, attracting countless gazes from the female disciples within the sect.

"Hey, look at that. Isn't that Su Yang? What's he doing here?"

"It really is Su Yang! Do you think he's here about 'that' event?"

"So that's what Su Yang looks like, huh? This is actually my first time seeing him and I have to say that he's definitely the most handsome man I've seen to date!"

"Me too! I was debating about whether I should participate in 'that' event, but after seeing his handsome face and noble aura, I have decided that I will also participate!"

"Not only is he exceedingly handsome but he's also extremely talented! What more do you need from him?"

"I heard he's also very skilled in the bed as a Dual Cultivator! I am going to see for myself whether that is true or not!"

It was not just the disciples that gossiped about Su Yang after seeing him, as the sect elders at the Heavenly Swan Sect were also glaring at Su Yang with a yearning gaze.

"What do you think he's doing here?"

"Why don't you go ahead and ask him?"

"You want me to talk to him? No way! Even though he's younger than me, our status is too far apart!"

"We can just follow him and see what he's up to." One of the sect elders suggested.

Thus, the disciples and sect elders decided to follow Su Yang.

And since Su Yang didn't tell them to leave, they continued to follow him.

By the time Su Yang reached the center of the sect, there were over a thousand disciples and sect elders following him.

Once he was at the center, Su Yang sat down on the ground and retrieved a few items before placing them on the floor in front of him.

"That looks like a scroll... What's he doing in the middle of the sect?"

The disciples and sect elders were curious about his intentions, but they didn't dare to disturb him and watched from a distance.

After writing a few things on the scrolls, Su Yang stood up and retrieved a couple of storage rings, and he proceeded to dump spirit stones on the floor like he was throwing out the trash, shocking the disciples and sect elders watching.

"W-What in heaven's name is he doing?! That's millions of spirit stones he's throwing on the floor!"

The disciples and sect elders swallowed nervously while salivating at the mountains of spirit stones that were piling on the floor at an insane rate. However, not a single disciple there dared to step forward to grab the spirit stones even if some of them rolled to their feet. After all, a few spirit stones weren't worth offending someone like Su Yang and potentially losing their chance to cultivate with him!

Chapter 749 Tossing Her on the Bed

Sometime later, once Su Yang emptied all of the storage rings and created many mountains from 150 million spirit stones, he returned to the scrolls on the floor and sat before them again.

After closing his eyes and concentrating a bit, Su Yang slapped the scrolls, causing a purple pillar of light to shoot out of the scrolls and towards the heavens.

However, before they could reach the clouds, the purple pillars were blocked by the formation around the Heavenly Swan Sect before being absorbed by it.

Once the purple pillar of light was completely absorbed, the spirit stones on the ground gushed with spiritual energy before being absorbed by the formation too.

A few minutes later, all 150 million spirit stones dissipated into the air.

Su Yang stood up and patted his buttocks afterward. He then looked at the dazed disciples and sect elders and spoke with a smile on his face, "I have just strengthened the defensive formation protecting the Heavenly Swan Sect. Even Sovereign Spirit Realm Cultivators will not be able to invade into this place now."

"There's no need to thank me since I am merely doing this for your Sect Master."

After a moment of silence, Su Yang continued, "By the way, for those of you who will be assisting me in the near future, I'd like to take this time to thank you now. Thank you, and I promise you that you won't regret it."

When the disciples and sect elders saw the handsome smile on Su Yang's face, they felt as though a sword had suddenly pierced their heart, clearly smitten by him.

"I will definitely be there for you, Su Yang!" One of the disciples suddenly shouted out loud.

"Me too! I will also be there! You can do anything to my body then!"

Once one of the disciples there opened her mouth, the others also began shouting their desire to participate until nearly every disciple there has expressed their excitement.

"Good. I will be looking forward to cultivating with all of you. Until then."

After saying that, Su Yang flew away and returned to Bai Lihua's living quarters.

"So that was Su Yang, huh? He's much more dreamy than I'd imagined!"

The disciples continued to talk about Su Yang even many minutes after he left the scene.

Sometime later, Su Yang returned to Bai Lihua's house and went to the pill room, where she was in the middle of concocting a pill with the new technique Su Yang had given her.

'It's only been a few hours since I gave her the technique and she's already comprehended it to the point where she can apply it to her alchemy. Bai Lihua... you're quite the fast learner,' Su Yang silently praised Bai Lihua inside his head, and he proceeded to sit down on the ground and waited for her to finish concocting the pill.

Two hours later, Bai Lihua retrieved her alchemy flames and opened the pill cauldron, taking out an Elementary-grade pill that was nearly pure white, signifying its high quality.

"What do you think, Su Yang? I tried using the technique you gave me and it improved my ability to control my alchemy flames significantly!" Bai Lihua said to him with excitement on her beautiful face.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Impressive to say the least."

"Really?" The joy on Bai Lihua's face became more apparent after hearing his words.

"Yes. You've exceeded my expectations once again. Therefore, I'll give you another reward. But I cannot think of anything, so why don't you tell me what you want from me? Anything you want," Su Yang suddenly said to her with a mysterious smile on his face.

"Anything I want from you...? Can it really be anything?" Bai Lihua swallowed nervously before asking him with a surprised look on her face.

"Yes. If it's within my power," Su Yang nodded his head.

"..."

After a moment of silence, Bai Lihua spoke with a resolute expression on her face, "Su Yang, I want you to be straightforward and serious with me for once. How do you feel about me, really? Can you answer my feelings seriously? Did you mean what you said to me previously? I won't let you avoid me any longer!"

"I know I said anything, but to think you would ask me for so many things... what am I going to do with you, really?" Su Yang shook his head with a smile on his face.

"Su Yang! Answer me seriously!" Bai Lihua said with a serious frown on her face.

"..."

The smile on Su Yang's face suddenly disappeared, and after a moment of silence, he began approaching her with a serious expression on his face.

"Eh? What are you doing to me, Su Yang?!" Bai Lihua cried out loud after Su Yang unexpectedly picked her up before carrying her to another room— her bedroom.

"S-Su Yang?!" Bai Lihua tried again.

However, Su Yang suddenly tossed her body on the bed before going onto the bed himself and pinning her down by being right on top of her.

"Su Yang..." Bai Lihua laid on the bed and stared at Su Yang's handsome face that was only inches away from her own blushing face.

"I want you, Bai Lihua. And I meant what I said previously. I want you to be my woman— officially," Su Yang spoke while staring at Bai Lihua right in her beautiful and clear eyes.

"What about you? Did you mean it when you said you love me? Do you really want to be my woman?"

Hearing Su Yang's words and his question, Bai Lihua turned silent for a moment with a dazed look on her face.

A few seconds later, Bai Lihua suddenly moved her arms and touched Su Yang's face with her hands before pulling his head into her.

Once their lips were connected, Bai Lihua began kissing Su Yang passionately, even using her tongue this time.

A few minutes of intense kissing later, Bai Lihua said to him with a loving gaze, "I really love you, Su Yang, and I want to be your woman."

Chapter 750 You're Actually a Pretty Lustful Woman, Aren't You?

After hearing Bai Lihua's confession, Su Yang nodded with a handsome smile on his face, and he said, "Very well, Lihua. I shall make you my woman today."

He then kissed her on the lips again whilst loosening her robes at the same time.

"Mmm..."

Bai Lihua could feel Su Yang's warm hands roaming inside her clothes and feeling the smooth skin on her body, yet she did not say anything and continued kissing him, allowing Su Yang to touch her as he pleased.

A few minutes later, Bai Lihua laid on the bed naked, revealing to Su Yang her large, luscious breasts and pretty little sister.

"You have a very beautiful body, and I can feel my heart beating faster after a single glance," Su Yang said with a handsome smile on his face as he teased the two pink and perky tips on Bai Lihua's peaks with his fingers.

A few moments later, Su Yang kissed her soft breasts and began sucking on them while his hands reached for the wet lips between her legs.

"Ahhh~!" Bai Lihua unconsciously closed her legs when she felt Su Yang's fingers brush against the edge of her slit.

"Relax." Su Yang said to her.

Bai Lihua nodded with a flushed face before she slowly opened her legs back up, allowing him full access to her untainted pink garden that has never been touched or seen by another man until today.

Su Yang immediately began touching her pink slit the moment it showed itself, rubbing his fingers in-between the split

"Mmmmh!" Bai Lihua's body trembled when an indescribable sensation slithered all over her body, and her body immediately gushed with Yin Qi in an uncontrollable manner.

"Wow, I didn't expect you to be that sensitive..." A mysterious smile appeared on Su Yang's face after seeing that Bai Lihua had climaxed so quickly.

"W-Wait a second Su Yang, my body is..."

However, Su Yang continued to rub her slippery bottom lips, causing it to gush with even more Yin Qi.

"Aaaaah~!"

A lustful expression appeared on Bai Lihua's face, looking like she was on the verge of going crazy.

"Look at how wet you are— you're actually a pretty lustful woman, aren't you, Lihua?" Su Yang gently pinched the pink pearl in her slit, overwhelming her body with pleasure.

"Ahhhh! It's coming out again!" Bai Lihua cried out loud as another wave of Yin Qi squirted from her cave.

"It hasn't even been five minutes and you've already climaxed 7 times. Aren't you a little too sensitive?" Su Yang chuckled afterward.

"Haaa... haaaa... haaa... How long are you going to tease my body, Su Yang?" Bai Lihua looked at him with teary eyes after experiencing too much pleasure.

"Are you already exhausted? The real fun hasn't even begun yet," Su Yang then removed his clothes and tossed them into the air behind him.

Bai Lihua immediately turned silent after seeing Su Yang's dragon, and she continued to stare at it with a dazed look on her face until Su Yang approached her.

However, Su Yang's dragon was so stiff at this moment that it wouldn't budge a millimeter even while he moved, which dumbfounded Bai Lihua even more.

'If he sticks that inside me, I'll definitely become a different person afterward!' Bai Lihua cried inwardly.

"W-Wait a second, Su Yang..." Bai Lihua suddenly said to him in a nervous voice.

However, Su Yang did not stop and suddenly grabbed her by the legs before pulling her body into him.

"Do you want to stop here?" Su Yang asked her after he pressed his whole sausage in-between her slit.

"You don't want this?"

Bai Lihua swallowed nervously at the sight of the overbearing object that was pointing at her from between her legs, feeling as though it was charming her.

"I... I want it..." Bai Lihua mumbled in a dazed voice, and she no longer thought about anything else and only could only focus on the powerful beast that had managed to entice her.

"Are you sure you want it?" Su Yang asked her again.

"Yes! I want it, Su Yang! Please give it to me!" Bai Lihua exclaimed.

"Very well!"

Su Yang immediately moved his hips back before thrusting it forward, piercing Bai Lihua's maiden cave with his sword, spreading her closed walls wide open.

"Ahhhh!" Bai Lihua nearly choked on her own saliva after feeling the intense pain that came from between her legs, feeling as though something had ripped inside her body.

"Are you okay?" Su Yang asked her afterward, as he could see her virgin blood staining the wet bed.

"I am... okay..." Bai Lihua managed to squeeze out these three words despite the pain in her body.

"It'll go away soon." Su Yang began moving his body a moment later, thrusting his beast inside Bai Lihua's bloody cave.

Meanwhile, Bai Lihua clenched her jaw to endure the pain. However, she gradually loosened her jaw as the pleasure began overshadowing the pain, and after a few minutes of cultivation, Bai Lihua could only feel pleasure coming from her lower body that rippled throughout the rest of her body.

Pap! Pap! Pap!

Su Yang pounded Bai Lihua's wet cave with his dragon reaching the deepest parts for many minutes without rest, and Bai Lihua's little sister continuously flowed with Yin Qi the entire time, climaxing again and again with barely any breaks in-between each of them.

"I can't... I can't handle this anymore, Su Yang! My body and mind are going to break at this rate!" Bai Lihua exclaimed sometime later.

"I know when someone is near their limit, and although you may feel like that, you are actually nowhere near your limit, and I am going to prove that to you!" After his sentence ended, Su Yang suddenly began moving his hips even faster than before.

"Aaaaaah~!"

Bai Lihua moaned sharply, yet she did not tell Su Yang to stop, and to her surprise, after they cultivated for a few more minutes, her condition suddenly improved, allowing her to endure the cultivation for longer.

Chapter 751 Finding a New Sect Master for the Heavenly Swan Sec

"Ahhh~! Aaaaah~! Aaaaaahn~!"

It has been over four hours since Su Yang began cultivating with Bai Lihua, and every time Bai Lihua believed she was at her limits, Su Yang proved her wrong by pushing her body even further and further, and they repeated this process until many hours had passed.

After cultivating for five long hours, Su Yang finally released his Yang Qi inside Bai Lihua for the first time, and his burning hot volcano erupted with a massive load of Yang Qi that he'd held inside his body for the past five hours, making it feel significantly more satisfying and explosive for Su Yang.

"Aaaa~!"

Bai Lihua released a sharp and long moan as Su Yang's Yang Qi gushed into her body like a powerful tidal wave, instantly filling every nook and cranny inside her stomach. However, the Yang Qi did not stop flowing even after Bai Lihua was completely full, and the excess Yang Qi leaked outside, creating a puddle of Yang Qi on the bed beneath them.

The moment Su Yang removed his beast from Bai Lihua's cave, like an outburst, his Yang Qi gushed outwards and splattered everywhere on the bed.

A few seconds later, the Family Seal appeared on Bai Lihua's body, and before Su Yang activated it, he explained to Bai Lihua the rules for the family.

"Do you accept?" Su Yang asked her afterward.

"I accept..." Bai Lihua mumbled in an exhausted manner.

After Bai Lihua's approval, Su Yang activated the Family Seal with his blood, welcoming her into his family.

"Welcome to the family, Lihua. And you shouldn't underestimate yourself so much. Look at how long you've lasted when you were ready to give up a few minutes into the session," he said with a smile a moment later. "This is relevant in alchemy too, so keep that in mind."

"I understand, Su Yang..."

Sometime later, Su Yang said to her, "I have refined the formation around the Heavenly Swan Sect so that not even Sovereign Spirit Realm Cultivators could damage it."

After spending some more time with Bai Lihua, Su Yang prepared to leave, "Anyway, I have appointments with some disciples in a bit, but I will come back next week. I will also leave some Profound-grade pill recipes for you to practice."

"Thank you, Su Yang," Bai Lihua said to him with a beautiful smile on her face.

"Don't even mention it."

After Su Yang left the scene, Bai Lihua proceeded to stare at the ceiling with a dazed look on her face for many minutes.

"I'll have to find someone else to be the Sect Master for the Heavenly Swan Sect before I leave with Su Yang to the Divine Heavens, but who should I pick?"

Sometime later, once she'd recovered enough strength to move, Bai Lihua left her building to find her disciple— Su Yin.

"Greetings, Master." Su Yin greeted her at the door with a respectful face.

"Su Yin, I have something important to tell you today," Bai Lihua said as she entered her house.

"I am all ears, Master."

"This might be sudden and come as a surprise for you but I... I plan on making you the next Sect Master for the Heavenly Swan Sect. I know you're still very young, but you are the most talented individual in this sect, and I have seen you lead the other disciples efficiently. Furthermore, every disciple in this place respects you. You have what it takes to become the Sect Master— I believe in you."

Bai Lihua revealed her plans to Su Yin, completely unaware that Su Yin will also be following Su Yang to the Divine Heavens.

A bitter smile appeared on Su Yin's face after she listened to Bai Lihua's words, and she said with her head lowered, "I'm very sorry, Master, but I do not want to be the Sect Master. No... I cannot be the next Sect Master!"

"What?! Why not? Can you at least tell me your reason? Do you dislike it here at the Heavenly Swan Sect?" Bai Lihua asked her with a surprised look, as she didn't expect Su Yin to refuse so quickly.

"T-That's not it, Master. It's just that... I won't be staying in the Heavenly Swan Sect forever. Actually, I plan on leaving this place in a year or so..." Su Yin explained.

"What?! You're leaving the Heavenly Swan Sect?! Where did this come from!" Bai Lihua was truly shocked now.

"I'm sorry, Master. I should have told you earlier but I haven't been able to think about what I should say to you. However, this has nothing to do with the Heavenly Swan Sect! In fact, I love it here! The disciples are friendly and the sect elders are always so nice to me. It's just that I have someone I love more than this place, and I have decided to leave this place to follow him."

"..."

Bai Lihua looked at Su Yin with a speechless look on her beautiful face. Someone she loves more than the Heavenly Swan Sect? There is only one person Su Yin loves more than anything in this world, and that was Su Yang, her elder brother.

"You... Are you going to the Divine Heavens with Su Yang?" Bai Lihua decided to ask her.

"Eh? How did you know?" Su Yin's eyes widened with surprise after hearing the unexpected words 'Divine Heavens' coming from Bai Lihua's mouth.

"Because I..." Bai Lihua decided that it would be better to show Su Yin the Family Seal on her body as an explanation, so she lifted her clothes and revealed her Family Seal to Su Yin the next moment.

"That's... Elder brother's Family Seal...?" Su Yin mumbled.

Even though this is her first time seeing the Family Seal, she has heard about it from Su Yang and she could tell at a glance that it was the Family Seal because she could feel some sort of connection towards it as Su Yang's little sister since she's technically from the 'Su Family' from birth!

Chapter 752 Not Wanting to Fall Behind

"W-When, Master? When did you receive my elder brother's Family Seal?" Su Yin asked her with a slightly dazed look on her face.

"Today..." Bai Lihua said with a slightly bashful face.

"So... you were just cultivating with him?" Su Yin looked at her with a face of disbelief, as she didn't think Bai Lihua would cultivate with Su Yang so soon!

"A-Anyway, since you will be following Su Yang to the Divine Heavens, I won't ask you to become the next Sect Master, and I will find another person to replace me," Bai Lihua said a moment later, dodging Su Yin's question and changing the topic before turning around and walking away.

"Master, you're also going to follow my brother Su Yang to the Divine Heavens, right?" Su Yin suddenly asked her. "After all, you already have his Family Seal."

"That's right. I will be going to the Divine Heavens with you two," Bai Lihua nodded before flying away.

"So Master also became my elder brother's lover..." A gentle smile appeared on her face a moment later, and she returned to cultivating sometime later. Now that she will be following Su Yang to the Divine Heavens, she must increase her cultivation as much as possible so that she doesn't become a burden for him when they leave this place.

Meanwhile, back at the Profound Blossom Sect, Su Yang continued to cultivate with the disciples.

Once he was finished with his daily routine, Su Yang went to Zhang Xiu Ying's living quarters to see her progress with the cultivation technique he'd created for her.

After speaking with Zhang Xiu Ying for some time, they entered the bedroom for some fun and cultivation.

Su Yang then left her house and proceeded to head to Sun Jingjing's living quarters to cultivate with her.

After Sun Jingjing, he went to find Su Liqing at the Medicine Hall since she was the closest.

Once Su Liqing was satisfied, Su Yang traveled to the sect elders' living quarters and cultivated with them until it was night.

At night, Su Yang would spend some time with the three goddesses before going to sleep with Tang Lingxi beside him on the bed.

The following morning, Su Yang repeated this routine, and he would continue doing this every single day until it was either time to visit Bai Lihua or Wang Shuren to give them their lectures.

A month passed by in a flash, and Su Yang went to pick up Senior Zeng and Luo Yixiao for their 3rd lecture.

"Cai Yan is not participating in the lecture today?" Luo Yixiao asked him after not seeing her presence there.

"No, and she will no longer be participating in the monthly lectures since she's staying in the Profound Blossom Sect so I get to lecture her more often," Su Yang explained to her.

Luo Yixiao expressed surprise, and she asked him a moment later, "Master, if I also stayed at the Profound Blossom Sect, would you be able to lecture me more often?"

"Well... Even though I say that I am lecturing Cai Yan, I am only giving her minor advice at the end of our cultivation sessions, and I really only lecture her seriously once every two weeks or so."

"That's fine! Even if it's only an extra lecture every month, as long as I get to learn more, I am willing to live at the Profound Blossom Sect, too! What do you think, Master Zeng?" Luo Yixiao turned to look at Senior Zeng who nodded.

He then said, "If I was not the Sect Master of the Divine Nature Garden, I would also be requesting to stay at the Profound Blossom Sect."

"What do you think, Master? Can I stay at the Profound Blossom Sect for extra lessons?" Luo Yixiao asked Su Yang.

A single lecture from Su Yang was enough to improve her alchemy skills by many months. If she could receive two lectures a month instead of just one, she'll definitely become a top alchemy expert in no time! Furthermore, she did not want to fall behind Cai Yan in alchemy, as that would hurt her pride.

Su Yang nodded a moment later and said, "If that's what you want, I won't say no. Just let me know when you are ready to move."

"I can move to the Profound Blossom Sect immediately after the lecture, as I don't have anything I need to take with me besides a few items!"

"Very well, I shall bring you to the Profound Blossom Sect afterward," Su Yang nodded.

Sometime later, they went to Wang Shuren's living quarters and began the monthly lecture.

Three days later, Su Yang brought Senior Zeng and Luo Yixiao back to the Divine Nature Garden. However, he didn't immediately leave like usual and waited for Luo Yixiao to pick up a few things.

Sometime later, Luo Yixiao said her goodbyes to Senior Zeng, "I will see you later, Master Zeng."

"Un. Make sure you don't cause any trouble for Su Yang or the Profound Blossom Sect." Senior Zeng said to her.

"Since both Cai Yan and Luo Yixiao will be at the Profound Blossom Sect, we'll begin having our lectures at my sect instead of Wang Shuren's house," Su Yang said to them afterward.

A few moments later, Su Yang flew away with Luo Yixiao, leaving Senior Zeng standing there with a dazed look on his face.

"It'll be a miracle if she doesn't return as a mature woman..." Senior Zeng sighed in a weird voice before returning to his room to practice alchemy.

Meanwhile, once they returned to the Profound Blossom Sect, Su Yang assigned the building beside Cai Yan's living quarters as Luo Yixiao's temporary home so that they could be neighbors and talk about alchemy whenever they wanted.

"Thank you, Master, for allowing me to stay here." Luo Yixiao bowed to him.

Su Yang nodded and said, "If you need anything else, you can find me at the Yin Yang Pavilion, or you can use this communication jade slip to contact me."

"I understand, Master." Luo Yixiao said before she settled inside her new home.

Chapter 753 Three Days Left

Knock *Knock*

Luo Yixiao knocked on Cai Yan's door after settling in her new home.

A few moments later, Cai Yan opened the door, and to her surprise, Luo Yixiao greeted her with a smile, "Hello, Cai Yan. I'm here to let you know that I will be your neighbor from now on."

"Huh?" Cai Yan did not immediately comprehend Luo Yixiao's words and stood there with a dazed face for a good moment.

"Y-You're going to be living here? In the Profound Blossom Sect? Don't tell me that you'd also decided to cultivate with our Master?" Cai Yan asked her afterward.

"No... I decided to stay in the Profound Blossom Sect so that I can receive extra lectures from Master. And you..." Luo Yixiao didn't notice this at first but after looking at Cai Yan for some time, she'd noticed that Cai Yan's aura was much fiercer than a month ago!

"Cai Yan! Your cultivation base! It increased by two whole levels! But it's only been a month since our last meeting! How is that possible?!" Luo Yixiao exclaimed in a dumbfounded voice.

"Impressive, right?" Cai Yan spoke with a prideful expression on her face, and she continued a moment later, "This is the result of cultivating with Master nearly every single day! I'll definitely reach the Earth Spirit Realm in another three months at this rate, and I'll finally be able to start using my Jade Flames for alchemy! I cannot wait!"

Hearing Cai Yan's excited words, Luo Yixiao couldn't help but mumble in a dazed voice, "Is it really that effective? 'Cultivating' with Master?"

Cai Yan nodded without hesitation and spoke in a shameless voice, "Master's Yang Qi is incredibly potent and rich with spiritual energy; it's unlike anything I've experienced before. And every time he releases it inside my body, it feels as though I'd consumed a priceless treasure."

"R-Release it inside your body...?" Luo Yixiao's mouth opened slightly, and she asked a moment later, "Aren't you... aren't you afraid of getting pregnant? If you become pregnant from cultivation, it'll hinder your life as an alchemist."

"No, it'll be fine as long as you absorb and cultivate the Yang Qi before it fertilizes you. Furthermore, Master is able to control his Yang Qi so he won't fertilize me by accident. And even if he does accidentally impregnate me, I have already asked him to impregnate me before so it won't matter too much," Cai Yan revealed everything to Luo Yixiao with a calm expression on her face.

"You what?!" Luo Yixiao's eyes widened with shock and disbelief. "Aren't you cultivating with him just to improve your cultivation? Why did you ask him to impregnate you then? And how did Master respond? Did he agree?"

Cai Yan nodded and said with a smile on her face, "Yes, Master agreed to impregnate me, and this is also my parent's wish."

"Unbelievable..." Luo Yixiao mumbled, clearly speechless.

After speaking with Cai Yan for a few more minutes, Luo Yixiao returned to her own home. However, she did not start practicing her alchemy like she normally would. Instead, she laid on the comfortable bed and stared at the ceiling with a dazed look on her pretty face, seemingly pondering about many things.

After pondering for many minutes, Luo Yixiao finally got off the bed and began practicing her alchemy skills.

Time passed quickly within the Profound Blossom Sect, and two more months had passed in the blink of an eye.

During this time, nothing notable has happened, and besides cultivating with the disciples and his women, Su Yang hasn't really left the Profound Blossom Sect besides picking up Senior Zeng for lectures, going to the Heavenly Swan Sect to cultivate with Bai Lihua and Su Yin, and cultivating with Wang Shuren at the Burning Lotus Sect.

"Darling... I am going to leave this body and return to my original body in three days. I can already feel my control over Hong Yu'er's body weakening. If it wasn't for the fact that she's willingly allowing me to

use her body, she could probably already force me out of her body even now." Tang Lingxi suddenly said to Su Yang one day in the morning.

"Is that so? What are you going to do now?" Su Yang asked her.

"As I'd said before, there's really nothing I can do when I am in this body. However, I'd like to spend the rest of my time here beside you," Tang Lingxi said to him with a bitter smile on her face.

Su Yang pondered for a moment before nodding his head and speaking, "Very well, I shall be by your side until you return to the Divine Heavens. In fact, let's leave the Profound Blossom Sect and go somewhere we can be alone for the next three days."

"Okay." Tang Lingxi said.

Su Yang then went to find Liu Lanzhi before telling her about the situation.

"I understand. I'll protect the Profound Blossom Sect until you return. Though, I doubt anything will happen even if you disappear for an entire year..." Liu Lanzhi said with a bittersweet smile on her face, feeling as though she wasn't being useful despite being the Sect Master.

After leaving Liu Lanzhi's room, Su Yang notified the disciples as well as his family that he will be unavailable for the next three days.

Once everything was prepared, Su Yang returned to his room where Tang Lingxi was waiting patiently.

"Shall we go, my dear Lingxi?" Su Yang extended his hand for her.

"Yes, darling." Tang Lingxi grabbed his hand with a sweet smile on her face.

A few moments later, Su Yang and Tang Lingxi left the Yin Yang Pavilion and flew away, disappearing from the Profound Blossom Sect.

After leaving the Profound Blossom Sect, the two of them flew without stopping until they reached the peak of a tall but lonely mountain in the middle of nowhere.

"What do you think? This place seems fitting enough, as our first meeting was also on a mountain in the middle of nowhere," Su Yang said to her with a smile on his face.

"It's perfect," Tang Lingxi nodded, and they proceeded to land on the top of the mountain a moment later.

Chapter 754 Tang Lingxi's Departure

Once Su Yang and Tang Lingxi were on the top of this unknown mountain, the two of them sat on the edge of some cliff and began speaking to each other casually like they were great friends with some intimate feelings for each other.

"I think my impressions of cliffs have been greatly affected by the Eternal Retribution Cliff," Su Yang said with a bittersweet smile on his face.

"Eternal Retribution Cliff... you know you could've left that place whenever you wanted if you truly tried," Tang Lingxi said to him, and she continued, "Why did you decide to stay inside? That's what I don't understand."

"Of course I could've left that place, but what about the outcome afterward? The Heavenly Emperor will chase me until the end of the universe if I left without his permission, and I didn't want an all-out war with 'her' father, nor did I want to go against 'her' family," Su Yang said with a sighing voice.

"So I prepared myself to stay inside for a few thousand years until the Heavenly Emperor eventually calms down and let me leave. But alas, that old man came out of the blue and reincarnated me into this world without any explanation. I don't know whether I should thank him or curse him..." Su Yang shook his head with a bitter smile.

"Though, one thing is for sure— the Heavenly Emperor will definitely think that I've escaped the Eternal Retribution Cliff if he realizes that I am still alive, and I cannot risk that until I've become strong enough. Therefore, don't expect me to announce my return to the world until I am sufficient in power once again."

"If the Heavenly Emperor tries to do anything funny to you, I won't just sit back and do nothing this time, Su Yang, because I am not going to lose you again even if I have to announce to the world our relationship," Tang Lingxi turned to look at him with a serious expression on her face.

"And if you reveal your relationship with a few individuals to the world and the Heavenly Emperor, would they still dare to touch you? I understand that you don't want to rely on us too much as the head of the family, but there are times when you must let us help you. After all, we're your family."

"I know, but those individuals... I don't know how they will feel about me revealing our relationship to the world. While I know what most of you think, there are times when one's action doesn't correspond to their character, and that is only natural," Su Yang said.

And he continued a moment later, "By the way, Lingxi, what happened to the rest of the family? What happened to the Family Seal after my death? Since I died in that world, the Family Seal should've also disappeared with me, right?"

Tang Lingxi then shook her head, "No, the Family Seal didn't disappear. I was going to let you know about this once you've returned, but since you asked now... The Family Seal remained on our body, but it is no longer activated. However, even though it isn't activated, the family rule still applies to us. I have never seen anything like this before."

"What? That is indeed unprecedented..." Su Yang mumbled in a surprised voice.

When one dies, it is common sense that the Family Seal of that person would also perish, but for some reason, even though he'd supposedly 'died', Su Yang's Family Seal remained on his women's body, and despite being deactivated, the family rule was still active.

"I guess I'll have to reactivate everyone's Family Seal once I return. However, there is also a chance that they have already moved on, so the family might downsize a little bit," Su Yang sighed once again.

"Don't underestimate our love for you, Su Yang. I have spoken with most of the family after your death, and although they'd left the family to do other things, they remain loyal to you, as they will continue to do so until their last breath," Tang Lingxi said to him.

"And you... Although you may not realize it yourself, you've changed a lot compared to your previous self, my darling. I'm not saying you aren't good the way you were before, but I kind of like the current you even more."

"No, I am definitely aware of my own changes. I guess this is what happens when you spend enough time in the mortal realm and you are surrounded by only mortals. And while it's only been a year, it feels like much longer has passed for me," Su Yang said.

"Lingxi... Thank you for coming here," Su Yang suddenly said to her with a heartfelt look on his face.

"I know you're doing your best to hold back since you cannot cultivate with me in that body, but I am also doing my best here. Once I return, I swear I will make up for the time lost and cultivate with you for as long as you want."

"You better make it up for me! You have no idea how much I am suffering! Even though I don't show it, I am extremely envious of those people around us! They get to cultivate with you every day as much as they want, yet I am only allowed to be near your side! This is akin to torture for me!"

"One month— No, I am going to cultivate with you for many years straight once you return to the Divine Heavens!" Tang Lingxi said with her fingers raised.

Su Yang nodded with a handsome smile on his face, "Although I won't be able to do that immediately after returning to the Divine Heavens, I'll cultivate with you for ten years straight if you want to after everything is settled."

"It's a promise then." Tang Lingxi suddenly extended her pinky finger.

"You can be really childish at times, you know?" Su Yang chuckled as he pinky swore with Tang Lingxi.

Su Yang and Tang Lingxi continued to talk about random things for the entire day.

Once it was dark and the starry night appeared, the two of them proceeded to watch the stars in silence until it was morning again where Tang Lingxi brought up another topic and the two of them continued to talk for another day.

Time passed quickly, and three days passed in the blink of an eye.

"I guess it's about time I leave this body and return to my original body in the Divine Heavens..." Tang Lingxi looked at her hands that were trembling uncontrollably.

She then lifted her head to look at Su Yang with tears in her eyes, dumbfounding him, who has never seen her cry before.

"To tell you the truth, darling, I am incredibly scared right now— scared that once I leave this body and return to the Divine Heavens, I will wake up and everything that has happened here will turn out to be nothing but a mere dream and that you are actually dead," Tang Lingxi spoke with tears flowing down her beautiful face.

"What if I never get to see you again once I leave this body? What if you never make it back to the Divine Heavens? These uncertainties... I am feeling real fear for the first time in my life."

"Lingxi..." Su Yang went to wipe her tears after he snapped out of his daze, and he said to her, "Don't worry, I promise you that this is not a dream and that I am real. Once you return to the Divine Heavens, I will follow you shortly."

"You promise?" Tang Lingxi said.

"I promise."

"I'll go on a rampage in the Divine Heavens if you don't return, and I might end up destroying the damn Heavenly Family that was the cause of all of this," Tang Lingxi suddenly added.

"G-Give me a few years before you decide to go crazy, okay? I don't want you to get hurt and end up like me..." Su Yang said with a stiff smile and his back soaked in cold sweats.

"Ten years. I will give you ten years more years to return to the Divine Heavens," Tang Lingxi said with a smile on her face.

"More than enough time." Su Yang nodded.

"Then I shall wait for you at 'that' place for ten years until you return," Tang Lingxi suddenly said.

"That place, huh. I'll be there— I promise." Su Yang made another promise to her.

"Oh, by the way..."

Tang Lingxi suddenly grabbed Su Yang's face and pulled it towards her own, gently kissing him on the lips.

Although he was surprised, Su Yang didn't say anything and savored this moment.

An entire minute later, once Tang Lingxi removed her lips, she said to him with a beautiful smile on her face, "Don't worry, I had permission to do that from Hong Yu'er. Anyway, I'll see you later, darling."

Su Yang nodded and said, "I'll see you later, my dear Lingxi."

Tang Lingxi then stood there and took a deep breath before closing her eyes.

Tang Lingxi opened her eyes a few moments later, but her eyes gave a different feeling, as was her aura, almost like she'd become a different person.

"Welcome back, Hong Yu'er, and thank you for allowing Tang Lingxi to borrow your body— you have my utmost gratitude," Su Yang said to her in a sincere voice and with his head slightly lowered, something that rarely happens.

"Su Yang..." Hong Yu'er stared at Su Yang with a profound feeling in her gaze, looking like she had a lot in her mind.

Chapter 755 The Real Hong Yu'er

"Su Yang... There's no need to thank me for what I've done, as I'd benefited greatly from lending my body, too. If not for Senior Tang, I would not have reached the Heavenly Spirit Realm at this age. Furthermore, my view of this world— the cultivation world would have remained as insignificant as an ant."

"How much of Lingxi's memories do you have?" Su Yang then asked her.

"Only what she willingly shared with me. Although our souls were temporarily merged together and she could see all of my memories, it didn't work the same way for me, as her soul was simply too powerful for me to even peek. However, I know a fair bit of the Divine Heavens and Senior Tang's background," Hong Yu'er responded with a calm expression on her face.

"Is that so? Then what do you plan on doing now?"

"I...I don't know," Hong Yu'er shook her head, and she continued after a moment of silence, "When we were officially engaged, I'd hated your guts because I thought you were idiotic or mindless, and I made it my life's mission to escape from you, but alas, after learning the truth from Senior Tang, I... I have changed, as did my views of you and this world, and I don't know what I should do from now on anymore..."

"I don't have any advice for you, but if you need someone to talk to, you know where to find me. And because of what you've done for Lingxi, if you need anything from me, I shall do my best to fulfill your desires."

Hong Yu'er nodded. "I will return to my family for the time being, and I will slowly decide what I want to do from now on."

Su Yang nodded and turned around, preparing to fly away.

"Wait a second, Su Yang!" Hong Yu'er suddenly stopped him.

"What is it?" he turned around to look at her with a calm gaze.

"You will be leaving this world to go to the Divine Heavens soon, right?"

"That's right."

"I see..." Hong Yu'er nodded, and after a moment of silence, she continued, "By the way, Senior Tang... she really loves you. Because we share the same body, I was able to feel what she felt— her emotions... everything. Although I don't know what she's thinking, I know for sure that she has endured a lot trying to resist her urges to pounce on you. Honestly, I probably wouldn't have minded it if she really did it, but I am also relieved that she'd managed to keep her promise with me."

"I know... Lingxi is a strong woman, and I am blessed to have someone like her in my life. My years of efforts chasing after her— it was definitely worth it. Anyway, is that all you have to say?"

"Yes. I'll see you later, Su Yang." Hong Yu'er nodded.

A few moments later, Su Yang flew back to the Profound Blossom Sect with a solemn feeling around him.

Meanwhile, Hong Yu'er remained at the mountain peak for a little longer to stare at the horizon.

Sometimes later, Hong Yu'er mumbled in a puzzled voice, "Senior Tang... I had given you the permission to cultivate with him... Why did you refuse? You'd suffered plenty because of it."

"I really want to know your answer, but I guess that's no longer possible now since you are no longer in this world."

After spending a few more minutes lingering around the mountain peak, Hong Yu'er also flew away and made her way back to the Hong Family.

After returning to the Profound Blossom Sect, Su Yang went back to his room and proceeded to sit by the window and stared at the horizon for the entire day with a blank look on his face, looking like he'd lost a partner or something.

"The moment you went away, this world suddenly became darker, and the void in my chest returned. I... really cannot stay in this world for long or I might really go crazy," Su Yang sighed in a low voice.

Sometime later, the door to his room was knocked on.

Knock *Knock*

"Are you inside, Su Yang?" Wu Jingjing's voice resounded outside afterward.

"I am. Come inside," Su Yang said.

Hearing his words, Wu Jingjing opened the door and came into his room with the other two goddesses—Zhu Mengyi and Lian Li.

And the moment they saw Su Yang's face, they could instantly tell that he was in a bad mood.

"Are you okay, Su Yang? Sister Lingxi has returned to the Divine Heavens, right?" Wu Jingjing asked him.

"Yes, she's gone. And although I am feeling a little lonely, it's nothing I cannot handle," Su Yang said, not even bothering to hide his emotions like normally.

The goddesses exchanged looks with each other, and then they approached Su Yang.

"The babies are asleep now. If you want, we can accompany you for the rest of the night until you are feeling better. Although we cannot replace Sister Lingxi, we still want to relieve some of your pain," Wu Jingjing said to him.

Su Yang immediately smiled and said, "There's no need for you— or any of you to 'replace' Lingxi, as you are you and Lingxi is Lingxi. Thank you for worrying about me, but it's really not that serious."

"Then you don't want to cultivate?" Zhu Mengyi asked him.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Now who said anything about not wanting to cultivate? Strip! We're going to have fun all night!"

The goddesses looked at each other with a relieved smile on their beautiful faces before they removed their clothes and went on the bed with Su Yang before cuddling each other for the entire night.

During their cultivation session, the girls quickly noticed that Su Yang was being a little more aggressive and intimate than normal, but that didn't bother them even the slightest, as it'd aroused their lust more than usual, allowing them to enjoy the cultivation more.

Chapter 756 Returning to Her Own Body

"..."

"..."

"..."

"Mmm..."

An extremely beautiful woman with long black hair, facial features that could easily doom an entire kingdom, a flawless figure and peerless jade-like skin slowly opened her eyelids, revealing the glowing red gems that had been sleeping within for many years.

"Looks like I am really back..." Tang Lingxi mumbled to herself with a dazed look on her fairy-like face.

She then stood up, walked a few steps, and stared at the void before her that was flickering with countless beautiful stars.

"Su Yang... I am serious... If you don't come back within ten years, I am going to fight until my last breath with the Heavenly Family."

After standing in the same spot for many days and staring at the void with a blank expression on her naturally cold-looking face, Tang Lingxi finally moved and took a single step towards the void.

Whoosh.

Tang Lingxi suddenly disappeared from her spot and appeared over a hundred thousands miles away from her original spot with just a single step and without any teleportation treasures.

After taking her first step, Tang Lingxi continued to take her second step... third step... fourth step and so on.

In less than a minute, Tang Lingxi had traveled over a million miles into the void, yet her expression remained calm, acting as though it was as natural as breathing and walking.

A few hours and hundreds of millions of miles later, Tang Lingxi could see a small planet in front of her.

After taking a deep breath, Tang Lingxi approached the planet.

A single step later, she entered this unknown world and hovered in the sky above the seemingly desolate land.

Tang Lingxi took another deep breath, and a moment later—

BOOM!

Her body exploded with a tyrannical red aura that could instantly flatten Sovereign Spirit Realm Cultivators without any effort and even kill Divine Realm Cultivators with ease.

Tang Lingxi's bloodthirsty aura quickly swept throughout the world like an unstoppable wave and anyone that was unfortunate enough to feel such this aura would uncontrollably tremble in profound fear.

Shortly after Tang Lingxi released her aura, as though there was a storm approaching, massive black clouds could be seen in the distance flying to her at incredible speed from every direction. However, if one looked closely, they would come to realize that these black clouds were actually people— a sea of people!

"The Young Lady has emerged from her secluded cultivation!"

"Young Lady! Welcome back!"

The countless people there shouted with excitement after seeing Tang Lingxi's beautiful figure.

Furthermore, each and every single one of these people were at least Divine Realm or above Cultivators.

"Quiet down! I just woke up and I don't need any noises right now!" Tang Lingxi suddenly shouted, and her voice boomed, causing the entire world to shake.

"..."

The place immediately turned dead silent— to the point where even a single pin drop could be heard a thousand miles away, and these Cultivators also slowed down in their movements, as they were afraid that they might anger Tang Lingxi.

Once all of the movements came to a complete halt and Tang Lingxi was surrounded by hundreds of thousands of experts, she spoke in a calm voice, "I only have one thing to say today— prepare yourselves. In ten years, depending on the outcome of a certain event, we may or may not be engaging another war with the Heavenly Family. However, it will be different this time because I plan on fighting until my last breath."

"..."

The entire place remained even a solid minute later despite her words, almost like they couldn't care less about her words.

"That's all."

Tang Lingxi then turned around and disappeared into the void again.

Shortly after Tang Lingxi left, the people that had remained silent suddenly erupted with noises and excitement.

"HEEEELLLL YEAAAAAH, BABY!"

"WHOOOOOOOOO!!! WE'RE GOING TO FIGHT THE HEAVENLY FAMILY AGAIN!"

"FUCK! MY BLOOD IS BOILING ALREADY! WHO WANTS TO SPAR WITH ME?!"

"THE ASURA GOD CLAN SHALL ONCE AGAIN DOMINATE THE FOUR DIVINE HEAVENS!!!"

The noise was so loud that if one were to look at the world from the void, they would be able to see it shaking.

"SHUT THE HELL UP! I CAN STILL HEAR YOU IDIOTS!" Tang Lingxi's voice suddenly boomed in the ears of every Cultivator there, causing their ears and nose to bleed.

"..."

However, none of the Cultivators there minded the abuse and even continued to smile and giggle like a bunch of kids who'd just been scolded for their 100th time.

Meanwhile, Tang Lingxi spent another few hours traveling in the void until she reached another world, and it was even smaller compared to the previous world.

"So you have returned, Lingxi..."

A ripple suddenly appeared from the world and a profound voice resounded in Tang Lingxi's mind before she could even approach the world.

"Yes, father. I have returned," Tang Lingxi said.

"How was it? Is 'he' still alive?"

"Yes, Su Yang is well and alive."

"I see..." Tang Lingxi's father mumbled in a somewhat relieved tone.

A moment later, he continued, "Then what's the reason for your declaration just now? If he's alive, there's no need for us to fight. After all, you were the one who stopped the last war."

"I only plan on fighting the Heavenly Family if Su Yang doesn't appear before me in ten years," she responded.

"Ten years... What if 'he' returns a year late only to find out that you'd died in a war against the Heavenly Family?" Her father questioned her.

"That won't happen, because Su Yang promised me that he'll appear before me in ten years, and if he doesn't... then he's not Su Yang, and the Su Yang I saw in that foreign world is merely an illusion." Tang Lingxi spoke with a calm and resolute expression on her face.

Tang Lingxi's father remained silent for a good minute before speaking again, "Very well... Do as you wish. After all, I have already given you and 'him' the Asura God Clan. Even if you perish with the entire family, that is your choice and I will not intervene no matter what."

"I know that already, father. Then, I'll be away for another ten years. Unless it's an emergency, don't contact me. If you do, you know where to find me," Tang Lingxi said before disappearing into the void a moment later.

Chapter 757 Disciple Rivalry

After spending the entire night cultivating with the three goddesses, Su Yang silently left the Yin Yang Pavilion whilst the ladies slept soundly in his room from exhaustion.

"One more year... I just need to hold on for another year..." Su Yang mumbled to himself as he continued his routine of cultivating with the disciples and lecturing his alchemy disciples.

And in the blink of an eye, three more months had passed since Tang Lingxi left Su Yang and returned to the Divine Heaven.

During this time, Bai Lihua managed to master Profound-grade pills and began studying Earth-grade pills. Senior Zeng also saw significant improvements to his alchemy abilities— to the point where he's almost unrecognizable.

As for Cai Yan and Luo Yixiao...

Knock *Knock*

"Welcome, Master! I was just about to call you! Look! I can finally control my Jade Flames!" Cai Yan spoke in an excited tone as she showed Su Yang the flickering green flames dancing on her palms.

In these three months, Cai Yan had cultivated with Su Yang nearly every day, reaching the Earth Spirit Realm only a week ago, and she had already mastered the flame controlling technique because she'd been studying it passively throughout the months.

"Congratulations, Cai Yan," Luo Lixiao said to her after coming out of her house because she noticed Su Yang's presence. "Looks like your hard work has finally paid off."

"Yes, I can now finally start to practice alchemy seriously just like you!" Cai Yan nodded with excitement.

A mysterious smile appeared on Luo Yixiao's face after hearing Cai Yan's words, and then she looked at Su Yang and said, "Master, can you come to see me afterward? I need some advice regarding a few things."

"Sure," Su Yang nodded.

A few moments later, Su Yang entered Cai Yan's room and began dual cultivating with her. Despite already reaching her goals and entering the Earth Spirit Realm, Cai Yan asked Su Yang if she could continue to cultivate with him from time to time, and of course, Su Yang accepted her requests.

After their cultivation, Cai Yan asked him, "Master, now that I am at the Earth Spirit Realm and have mastered my flame control, are you going to impregnate me soon?"

Su Yang nodded his head and said, "If that's what you want, but I recommend you improve your cultivation a little bit more before you conceive."

"I understand!" Cai Yan said.

Sometime later, Su Yang gave her a quick lecture regarding alchemy and some advice for her alchemy flames control.

Afterward, Su Yang left her house and went to find Luo Yixiao, who was only a few steps away from Cai Yan's house.

"Thank you for coming, Master," Luo Yixiao said to him.

"What did you want to talk to me about? It isn't related to alchemy is it?" Su Yang said to her with a sharp gaze.

Luo Lixiao showed a defeated smile on her face, and she said, "As expected of you, Master. There's nothing I can hide from you."

"Though, you are wrong about one thing— this is somewhat related to alchemy."

"Oh? Then what is it?" Su Yang asked.

"Well... I have already decided this before today many weeks ago, but I also want to cultivate with you," Luo Yixiao spoke with a calm expression on her face, yet her heart was beating like a drum.

"..."

After a moment of silence, Su Yang asked her, "Can I ask why you'd come to this conclusion?"

"There are two reasons, Master. One, I don't want to fall behind Cai Yan who has already surpassed me in terms of cultivation, and finally, because I have come to love you, Master." Luo Yixiao spoke with a serious look on her face.

"Then why did you wait until now to ask me this?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

Although he could already imagine, he still wanted to give her an opportunity to relieve herself.

"Well, I wanted the two of us to be on an even field to a certain extent. After all, I had the advantage in both cultivation level and alchemy skills previously. Now that Cai Yan is above me in terms of cultivation, she will have to try and surpass me in alchemy while I am going to try and surpass her in cultivation." Luo Yixiao said.

"Rivalry between disciples, huh? Well, it's not a bad thing, and it's quite common. Many Masters even encourage rivalry, as it motivates the disciples to improve even more than normal." Su Yang nodded.

And he continued, "However, are you sure? You know what it means to cultivate with me, right?"

"Yes, I am well aware." Luo Yixiao nodded.

"Then when do you want to start?" Su Yang asked.

"Right now."

Immediately after saying those words, Luo Yixiao swiftly removed her clothes, letting them slide onto the floor and exposing her slim naked body to him.

Su Yang smiled after seeing this.

Sometime later, they entered the bedroom, and Luo Yixiao sat on the bed with her legs closed in an elegant manner, yet Su Yang could still see the slit between her legs from above.

"Let's get you loosened up first, shall we?" Su Yang approached her before grabbing her legs and spreading them wide open.

"Oh!"

Luo Yixiao released a surprised noise as she laid on the bed with her legs spread by Su Yang.

'T-This is much more embarrassing than I'd expected...' Luo Yixiao cried inwardly as she felt a gentle breath on her little sister.

"Mmmm..."

Luo Yixiao's body trembled after Su Yang gently blew air into her little sister, feeling a chill climbing her spine.

A second later, Su Yang kissed her slit and began licking all over her slit with his soft tongue.

"Aaahh..."

Luo Yixiao moaned in a gentle voice as she submerged her mind in pleasure, feeling her body temperature quickly heat up.

A few moments later, once Luo Yixiao's little sister was soaking wet, Su Yang switched from his tongue to his fingers and inserted his fingers inside her warm cave, surprising Luo Yixiao.

Chapter 758 - Plowing Luo Yixiao

"Aaaah~!" Luo Yixiao released a surprised m.o.a.n after Su Yang stuck his fingers inside her closed cave.

"Oh? Looks like I've found your weak spot," Su Yang said to her with a grin on his face as he rubbed a specific location inside her cave with his fingers.

"Aah... Ahhh... Ahhhhn!"

Luo Yixiao's body jumped when Su Yang focused on a certain spot inside her cave, and her body gushed with Yin Qi the next moment.

Seeing this, Su Yang continued to tease Luo Yixiao's weak spot for many minutes until she was practically crying from too much pleasure.

"Haaa... haaa... haaa... Master..." Luo Yixiao looked at him with a yearning gaze on her l.u.s.tful face.

"Please... stop teasing me already and stick it inside me..."

Hearing her pleading voice, Su Yang stood up with a smile on his face, and he pressed his sausage between her slit after removing his clothes.

A moment later, he pierced her walls and broke the seal that kept her status of maiden intact.

"M-Master...!" Luo Yixiao clenched her teeth together to endure the pain, as this is her first time experiencing such intense pain before. However, she still managed to endure it much better than Cai Yan and quickly got used to the pain.

Once Luo Yixiao gave him the signal to continue with a gentle nod of her head, Su Yang began thrusting his stiff rod inside her body, rubbing her inner pink walls with his rod.

"Aahhn~"

"Aaaaaah~!"

"Aaaaahhhhhh~!"

Luo Yixiao m.o.a.n.ed in a satisfied voice as Su Yang pounded her body for many minutes without rest.

Sometime later, Luo Yixiao changed her position and kneeled on the bed on all four limbs, and she allowed Su Yang to plow her body from behind in the d.o.g.g.y style.

"Mmm..."

"Ooooh~"

"Aahn...!"

Many minutes later, Su Yang released his Yang Qi into Luo Yixiao's body.

"Master..." Luo Yixiao mumbled in a satisfied voice before falling asleep from exhaustion.

Su Yang shook his head with a smile after seeing this, and he sighed, "How are you going to cultivate if you fall asleep?"

Of course, he didn't actually wake Luo Yixiao up and allowed her to sleep peacefully.

While Luo Yixiao can cultivate his Yang Qi whenever she wants as long as it stays inside her body, the quality of his Yang Qi will not remain the same as forever, so the longer one waits to absorb his Yang Qi the more weaker effect it'll have on them.

However, because Su Yang is a dual cultivator who has trained his Yang Qi specifically, his Yang Qi will remain at its highest quality for many hours without degrading even slightly, allowing Luo Yixiao a few hours of leeway.

After putting a blanket on Luo Yixiao's n.a.k.e.d body, Su Yang also left behind a cultivation technique for dual cultivators next to her head so she sees it the moment she wakes up.

Once he left her house, Su Yang returned to the Yin Yang Pavilion to rest for the day, as he'd already fulfilled all appointments with the disciples for the day.

'Even though it's been half a year since I reached the peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm, I am still nowhere near reaching the Sovereign Spirit Realm. I guess I really have to consume the Hellfire Seed in order to breakthrough,' Su Yang pondered inwardly.

Sometime later, someone knocked on his door.

Knock Knock*

"Su Yang, it's me." Lian Li's voice resounded.

"Come inside."

Lian Li opened the door and entered the room a moment later.

"Su Yang, look at this— it's grown even bigger." Lian Li approached Su Yang while rubbing her belly that had started to become round only recently, and she has been visiting Su Yang every day ever since then from excitement.

"Come here." Su Yang patted his lap.

Lian Li nodded and sat on his lap.

Su Yang then rubbed her round belly and said, "How do you feel?"

"Besides a little full, I am perfectly fine," she said.

"I see... that's good." Su Yang nodded with a smile on his face.

"By the way, I have been wanting to ask you..." Lian Li suddenly said with a perplexed look on her face, and she continued after a moment of silence, "Do you... do you think I can still cultivate with you while I am in this condition? Or is that too weird?"

"You mean while you are pregnant? I don't see why not," Su Yang responded with a calm expression.

"Eh? Really? You don't think that's weird?" Lian Li asked him with wide eyes, seemingly surprised to hear such a causal answer. After all, most people would be put off by such an idea.

"Weird? This isn't going to be my first time cultivating with a pregnant woman— that is for sure," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"Really?" Lian Li's eyes widened some more after hearing such words.

Su Yang nodded and continued, "Yes, and some even had bigger stomachs than you do now."

"Do you want me to prove it to you?" He then asked her.

"R-Right now?"

"Whenever you want," he quickly responded.

"I want it now!" Lian Li also responded with haste.

"Very well..."

Lian Li and Su Yang proceeded to get on the bed a few moments later with their clothes already removed.

Su Yang then stared at the bump on Lian Li's stomach and chuckled, "It looks good on you. Kind of cute, too."

"C-Cute...?" Lian Li was speechless after hearing his praises.

Su Yang lowered his head and kissed the bump on Lian Li's stomach, and after some foreplay, he inserted his thick rod into her cave.

"Aaah~!" Lian Li m.o.a.ned loudly, immediately feeling a difference, almost as though Su Yang's rod was thicker than usual.

Meanwhile, Su Yang also felt the difference, feeling as though Lian Li's cave was squeezing his rod harder than previously.

Of course, the reason it felt tighter than usual was because Lian Li's cave was actually tighter than usual due to her pregnancy, which is completely normal.

"I am going to move now, okay?" Su Yang said to her a moment later.

"Okay," Lian Li nodded.

Chapter 759 - Tighter Than Usual

"Mmm..."

"Mmmmm~"

"Aaahn..."

Lian Li m.o.a.ned softly as Su Yang gently and slowly thrust his rod inside her cave so that she could get used to the new feeling.

Once Lian Li was comfortable with the new sensation, Su Yang began moving his h.i.p.s faster and faster.

"You're drooling more than usual," Su Yang said to her after noticing an excessive amount of Yin Qi flowing from her cave just a few minutes later.

Of course, this was natural, as pregnancy helped Lian Li's inner walls soften and discharge more fluid than usual, allowing her to not only feel more pleasure than normal despite Su Yang barely doing anything but also release more Yin Qi.

"More... more... Su Yang... go deeper!" Lian Li pleaded with a l.u.s.tful look on her face.

Su Yang nodded, and he pushed his rod deeper into her cave until it reached the end.

"Ooooh~!" Lian Li released a loud and satisfying m.o.a.n when she felt her belly become even fuller, almost like it was bloating up.

A few minutes later, Lian Li's b.r.e.a.s.ts began leaking b.r.e.a.s.t milk.

When Su Yang saw this, he pulled her body off the bed and made her sit on his lap while he sucked on her b.r.e.a.s.ts.

"Mmmmm~"

Lian Li's hands hugged Su Yang's head and mumbled, "Do you like it, Su Yang?"

After sucking a few mouthfuls of her b.r.e.a.s.t milk, Su Yang said with a smile on his face, "It's incredibly fresh and sweet— I like it."

The two of them continued to cultivate with each other for another hour or so until Lian Li could no longer endure it. Since Lian Li's sensitivity increased, her stamina consumption also increased, making it difficult for her to have long sessions with Su Yang.

However, even though it was only for an hour, Lian Li felt more satisfied than she would in ten hours.

"Are you okay?" Su Yang asked her afterward.

"Yes... I am perfectly fine..." Lian Li responded in a slightly panting voice.

"Thank you... Su Yang..." she added a moment later.

"There's no need to thank me. I won't ignore you just because you are pregnant," he chuckled.

"Anyway, you should get some rest. I am going to check on Liqing before going to the Xie Family," Su Yang then said.

"Un. I see you later," Lian Li said to him before quickly falling asleep on his bed.

After leaving the Yin Yang Pavilion, Su Yang went to the Medicine Hall to check on Su Liqing.

"Welcome, Su Yang." Su Liqing said to him as she sat on her bed while reading a book.

"Liqing, how's your body?" Su Yang asked her the moment he saw her, and he continued, "Any changes?"

Hearing his words, a bitter smile appeared on Su Liqing's face, and she removed the blanket covering her, revealing to him her flawless figure.

"Unfortunately, there's still no change. Perhaps I am really infertile and unable to get pregnant..." Su Liqing sighed.

Even though her stomach is supposed to be bloating like Lian Li, there were no changes to her body even many months after Su Yang supposedly i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed her.

"Hmm... I should've done this before, but I wanted to believe that you were pregnant so I purposefully ignored it. Give me your hands, I'll check your body," Su Yang said to her.

Su Liqing nodded and extended her fair hands for him.

Su Yang proceeded to check her pulses and used his spiritual energy to probe deeper into her body.

A few minutes later, Su Yang opened his mouth and said, "Looks like you are really not pregnant. However, there shouldn't be any problem with my Yang Qi, as I'd only released fertile Yang Qi into your body for the past couple of months, so there must be a problem with your reproductive system."

"So it's really my problem..." Su Liqing sighed.

Seeing her dejected face, Su Yang gently pinched her soft cheeks and said with a smile on his face, "Don't worry about it. I have treated hundreds of women who had problems with pregnancy issues— I'll find a cure for you as soon as possible."

"Thank you, Su Yang." Su Liqing said.

"There's no need to be impatient. We'll have plenty of time to make a baby in this life," Su Yang said.

And he continued, "Do you want to cultivate today? If not, I'll head to the Xie Family and start preparing for the cure."

"I'll cultivate," Su Liqing nodded.

A few moments later, Su Yang entered the bed, and they began cultivating with each other. Of course, Su Yang released his fertile Yang Qi into her stomach regardless if Su Liqing can become pregnant or not from it.

After their cultivation, Su Yang left the Medicine Hall and retrieved the flying ship. However, he did not immediately fly to the Xie Family and instead called for Xiao Rong.

"Xiao Rong! Come over here for a moment!" Su Yang said out loud.

A few seconds later, Xiao Rong appeared before him like a ghost.

"Can you do me a favor and go on a small errand for me?" Su Yang said to her, and he continued, "Go to the Holy Central Continent and find Lian Li's parents. Let them know Su Yang had sent you to pick up a few herbs. Oh, you can also tell them about what happened to Patriarch Gold."

"In return for your efforts, I'll do 'that' to you again," Su Yang said to her with a smile.

Xiao Rong's eyes flickered with excitement after hearing his words, as she hasn't felt Su Yang's touch since 3 months ago.

She quickly nodded before disappearing from Su Yang's sight and flew towards the Holy Central Continent at record-breaking speed.

Meanwhile, Su Yang jumped onto the flying ship and soared towards the Xie Family in Snowfall City.

"..."

Xiao Rong arrived at the Holy Central Continent in less than a minute, and she hovered in the air with her small nose moving slightly.

Once she'd picked up a scent that smells similar to Lian Li's scent, Xiao Rong flew towards that location faster than a shooting star, arriving at Emperor Lian's household two seconds later.

Chapter 760 - Another List of Medicine

Once Xiao Rong arrived at the Lian Family's household, she spoke in a calm voice that resounded very loudly, startling everyone within the palace.

"Lian Li's parents, come out!"

A few moments later, both Emperor Lian and Feng Xindou came out of the building with a serious and nervous expression on their face.

They flew before Xiao Rong and bowed to her while speaking in a respectful tone, "Welcome to the Lian Family, Senior. How may we assist you today?"

Even though they have never seen Xiao Rong before, they could tell at a glance that she was a profound expert who was stronger than both of them together.

'An extremely beautiful little girl, silver hair, and a face that resembles Fairy Su Yue's facial appearance... Could this be the expert who nearly destroyed the Golden Lion Academy in a single night?! What does she want from us?!' Emperor Lian cried inwardly as he guessed Xiao Rong's identity.

And just as Feng Xindou opened her mouth, Xiao Rong said, "Su Yang sent me here, and he told me to receive some herbs from you."

"S-Su Yang? You're with Su Yang?" Feng Xindou looked at her with a surprised look on her face.

Xiao Rong nodded.

"Oh... thank heavens..." Feng Xindou released a deep sigh of relief after learning Xiao Rong's identity, and she continued to speak without feeling tense or nervous, "Please give me a moment, Senior. I'll go grab the medicine right now."

Feng Xindou returned to the house to grab the medicine while Emperor Lian remained outside with Xiao Rong, feeling incredibly awkward and somewhat nervous due to Xiao Rong's immense yet invisible aura.

"One more thing..." Xiao Rong suddenly said, startling Emperor Lian, "Patriarch Gold... Su Yang told me to tell you about what happened to him."

"Patriarch Gold? How is he related to Su Yang?" Emperor Lian raised his eyebrows.

Xiao Rong proceeded to explain to Emperor Lian about what happened to Patriarch Gold and how he fought Su Yang and brilliantly lost, even being sealed at the bottom of the Jade Sea.

"..."

Emperor Lian's jaw dropped wide open and his eyes widened with shock.

"Patriarch Gold did what?! He went to the Eastern Continent trying to kidnap some woman— Su Yang's woman?!" Emperor Lian was profoundly speechless after realizing the truth.

"Damn! And to think I'd been searching for him for the past year! What a waste of my damn effort!" Emperor Lian cursed loudly.

"Why are you cursing?" Feng Xindou suddenly returned and asked him.

"Well... it's like this..."

Emperor Lian then explained the situation and recalled what Xiao Rong told him not long ago about Patriarch Gold and his deeds.

"What?! How dare he!" Feng Xindou exclaimed in an angry voice, and she continued, "I will personally deal with the Golden Lion Academy after this!"

A few moments later, Feng Xindou handed Xiao Rong a storage ring and said to her, "Everything that Su Yang asked for should be inside. In fact, we made sure there's extra medicine inside," Feng Xindou.

Xiao Rong nodded and accepted the storage ring.

However, right as Xiao Rong turned around and prepared to leave, Feng Xindou suddenly said, "Please wait a minute! If you're with Su Yang, have you seen my daughter Lian Li lately? How is she doing?"

"Lian Li..." Xiao Rong pondered for a few seconds before speaking, "Her stomach is growing bigger."

"Really?! That means she will be giving birth soon, dear!" Feng Xindou said to him with pure excitement on her face, even shaking his body with her hands.

"Our daughter is giving birth already? That's much quicker than I'd expected!" Emperor Lian mumbled in a shocked voice, as he couldn't have imagined that Lian Li would advance so quickly!

"D-Do you think we'll be able to see our grandchildren once she's born?" Feng Xindou asked her.

"I will ask Master," Xiao Rong said with a calm expression.

"Master?"

They looked at Xiao Rong with wide eyes.

Su Yang actually has someone this powerful as a servant? It's no wonder why he's always so overbearing and calm! If they also had someone like Xiao Rong as a servant, they'd be able to conquer the entire world with ease!

Sometime later, Xiao Rong returned to the Eastern Continent. However, since Su Yang had left for the Xie Family, she decided to go into his room and wait for him there.

Meanwhile, at the Xie Family.

"How's your body, Xing'er?" Xie Wang sat on a chair beside Xie Xingfang, who was laying in her bed and gently caressing the bump on her stomach with a passionate gaze.

"I am feeling great," Xie Xingfang said, and she continued, "I am still in the middle stages of pregnancy so it isn't anything too crazy."

After a moment of silence, Xie Wang asked her, "When are you going to tell your father about this? You'd managed to keep it a secret from him by pretending like you are doing secluded cultivation, but I doubt you'll be able to keep this a secret until you give birth."

"I know, grandfather. I have been thinking about this lately, and I plan on telling him soon— sometime this week," Xie Xingfang said.

"Why not tell him today?"

A third voice suddenly resounded in the room, causing the two of them to turn and look at the window.

"Su Yang!" A bright smile appeared on Xie Xingfang's face when she saw him.

"Since you're here, I'll leave you two alone." Xie Wang stood up and prepared to leave the room.

However, Su Yang stopped him and said, "Wait for a second, old man. I need to speak to you about something."

"What is it?" Xie Wang stopped and asked.

"I need the Xie Family's help to find me these medicines," Su Yang handed him a long list.

"Again?" Xie Wang took a glance at the list, and his eyes immediately widened.

When Su Yang saw this, he said with a smile on his face, "Don't worry, I will give you the money to buy these medicines this time."

Chapter 761 - I Didn't Know I Was That Strong

"Here, take this."

Su Yang suddenly tossed a storage ring at Xie Wang and said, "There are 100 million spirit stones inside; it should be enough to buy every single ingredient on that list and still have a few million leftovers."

"A hundred million spirit stones..." Xie Wang looked at him with wide eyes. Although he can imagine where he'd obtained this massive wealth, it was still shocking to see someone tossing around 100 million spirit stones without any hesitation.

"Anyway, how's your body, Xing'er?" Su Yang looked at her next with a gentle smile on his face.

"It's growing properly," Xie Xingfang said while rubbing her bloated stomach.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "That's good. Since there are no problems, why don't we show it to your father?"

"Now?" Xie Xingfang asked.

"Yes. The longer we wait, the more he'll feel left out. Although I like messing with him, I am not cruel enough to devoid him of such experiences." Su Yang nodded.

Xie Xingfang also nodded and slowly got off the bed.

"I will speak to my father," she said as she wrapped herself with a thin blanket that covered her bloated stomach.

Sometime later, Xie Wang left to gather the medicine whilst Su Yang and Xie Xingfang went to speak with Lord Xie, who is currently in a meeting with a dozen high-standing individuals from around the Eastern Continent.

"Your Majesty, I think we should do something about the Burning Lotus Sect and their monopoly in the pill industry. This is extremely unhealthy for the business and other competitors as a whole. We cannot allow the Burning Lotus Sect to grow anymore or they'll sooner or later become unstoppable." One of the individuals at the meeting suddenly said.

"I agree with what Senior Ruan just said, Your Majesty. The Burning Lotus Sect currently monopolizes over 95% of the market in pills and medicine, leaving the rest of us without any business. I'm afraid that they might threaten the Xie Family once they are powerful enough."

"The Burning Lotus Sect has been only an above-average sect at best previously, but they suddenly rose to fame after the Earth Advancement Pill was discovered. I understand that this pill was given to them by the Alchemy Master but such an important pill... I think its recipe should be shared so that the cultivation world can see further development." Another one said.

"Indeed. I also find it quite ridiculous that only one person in this world besides the Alchemy Master has the pill recipe for the Earth Advancement Pill. What are we going to do if she suddenly disappears?"

"Your Majesty, perhaps you can persuade Wang Shuren to share the pill recipe. I won't discredit her recent achievements but I don't think someone who was only an auction house manager recently should bear such a heavy responsibility that affects the entire cultivation world."

"Speaking of the Alchemy Master, I heard from the Xiang Family that he's actually Su Yang from the Profound Blossom Sect."

"Su Yang... that number one genius from the Regional Tournament? I also think we should do something about him, as he's getting too powerful too quickly."

"But the Xie Family formed an Alliance with the Profound Blossom Sect... What can we do to him?"

"..."

Lord Xie listened to these people with a pondering expression on his face.

Once they've stopped talking, Lord Xie spoke, "I understand where all of you are coming from, and I only have one thing to say— that you guys have no idea what the real situation is."

"Huh?"

The people there looked at Lord Xie with wide eyes. What is the real situation then?

"Su Yang— he's not who you think he is. As for Wang Shuren... if she's working with Su Yang, I'm afraid there's nothing we can do about her either," Lord Xie said.

"What?! That's absurd! Even if Su Yang is from one of the Four Great Families, he shouldn't hold so much authority and power! He's still only 18 years old!"

Lord Xie shook his head again and said, "As I'd already said, you don't understand the situation. There's nothing you nor I can do about him. However, you are welcomed to try. Just remember what happened to the Million Snakes Sect when they offended him."

"The Million Snakes Sect..."

The experts there looked at each other with their backs soaked in cold sweats.

"What's this? A conversation about me without my presence? That's not very respectful."

A calm voice that did not belong there suddenly resounded.

Everybody in the room then turned to look at the door.

"Y-You are!"

One of the individuals there suddenly stood up and pointed at him with a trembling hand.

"Y-You are that little bastard who trapped me and my disciples for nearly two months at the border of the Southern Region!" Sect Master Qian exclaimed in a shocked voice, as he would never forget Su Yang's face after what had happened before.

Su Yang looked at the old man he'd met during his trip to the bandits' hideout.

"Oh, you're alive." Su Yang spoke in a nonchalant voice.

"H-How dare you lie to me! You said the formation would only last for a month! It lasted for nearly two months! My disciples nearly died of starvation and dehydration!" Sect Master Qian roared loudly.

'What? Su Yang was the one he met at the Southern Region?' Lord Xie's eyes widened with surprise after realizing this. Sect Master Qian had complained to him about this mysterious young man who had unfathomable skills with formations. However, because Sect Master Qian didn't know his identity, there was nothing they could do about it.

'I should've known it was Su Yang when Sect Master Qian called him a handsome young man!' Lord Xie nearly facepalmed himself.

"I didn't lie to you. I merely underestimated my own strength," Su Yang shrugged, and he continued, "I didn't know I was that strong. I'm sorry for the inconvenience."

"Bullshit!" Sect Master Qian nearly puked out a mouthful of blood after hearing Su Yang's half-assed response that did not sound apologetic at all!

Chapter 762 - Lord Xie's Reaction

"Anyway, the both of us should leave what happened in the past behind. However, if you want to pursue this matter further than necessary, I'll entertain you," Su Yang said to Sect Master Qian with an overbearing smile on his face.

"You dare to threaten me before His Majesty's presence?! Even if you are Su Yang from the Profound Blossom Sect, you cannot act like there are no responsibilities behind your actions!"

Sect Master Qian then turned to look at Lord Xie and bowed to him, "Your Majesty! This subordinate seeks justice!"

Lord Xie sighed inwardly after seeing this. What does Sect Master Qian want him to do? Punish Su Yang? An Immortal who can overtake the Xie Family and conquer the entire world by himself if he desired?

"If you need someone to apologize to you, I'll do it in their stead, Senior Qian," Another voice suddenly resounded in the room, causing everyone there to look at the entrance again.

"Y-Your Highness!"

The people there were dumbfounded by her sudden appearance. Why did Xie Xingfang suddenly show up? And she was even in such an odd appearance, looking like she'd just gotten out of bed and still had her blankets wrapped around her body.

"W-What did you mean by your words just now, Your Highness?" Sect Master Qian asked her after snapping out of his dazed state. "Why would you apologize to me? You didn't do anything wrong!"

"If my partner did something wrong, I also share the blame. Therefore, if Su Yang had mistreated you, Senior Qian, I'll lower my head and apologize to you if that's what you want." Xie Xingfang said in a calm voice.

"N-No! That wouldn't be necessary, Your Highness! This subordinate would never ask you to lower your head..." Sect Master Qian quickly rejected her suggestion, as that was akin to courting death even if Xie Xingfang didn't mind it.

"Then will you forgive Su Yang for his mistake?" Xie Xingfang then continued.

"I will! I will forgive him!" Sect Master Qian immediately nodded his head with a stiff smile on his face.

"Thank you, Sect Master Qian." Xie Xingfang said with a smile on her face.

"B-By the way, what do you mean by 'partner'?" Someone there suddenly asked a moment later.

"Hm? It means exactly as it sounds, Senior Ruan. Su Yang is my partner." Xie Xingfang responded calmly.

"W-What?!"

Everybody in the room except Lord Xie cried out loud, as this is their first time hearing of such a thing.

Su Yang then wrapped his arms around Xie Xingfang's shoulders and said, "That's right. We're partners."

"B-B-B-But you're... You're a dual cultivator!" One of them spoke in a stuttering voice.

"So what if I am a dual cultivator? I can't be with Xing'er because I am a dual cultivator? That doesn't make any sense." Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

"I mean..." The person who just spoke was speechless.

"Anyways, what do you want from me now, Su Yang? I am in the middle of an important meeting if you somehow still haven't realized by now." Lord Xie said to him a moment later.

"Me? I don't need anything from now, nor am I here for you." Su Yang said.

"Then why are you here, interrupting my meeting?" Lord Xie said with a frown.

"Because I am the one who has business here, father. However, since you're busy, we can do this later." Xie Xingfang said to him.

"Xing'er... You just came out of secluded cultivation, right? What do you need from me?" Lord Xie asked her.

"I am here to apologize to you, father, because I have been lying to you for a while now," she said before lowering her head and apologizing, "I am sorry, father, for lying to you."

Lord Xie was baffled. What on earth is happening? What kind of situation is this? What did Xing'er lie to him about?

"I wouldn't call it lying, though." Su Yang suddenly said, and he continued, "She merely kept it a secret from you, so I don't consider that as lying."

Lord Xie frowned, and he turned to look at the other people in the room.

The experts understood the meaning behind Lord Xie's gaze and began walking out of the room, giving them some privacy.

Once the door was closed and they were alone, Lord Xie stood up and walked to stand in front of them.

"Well? What have you been keeping a secret from me?" Lord Xie asked them, his heart beating nervously for some reason.

Xie Xingfang took a deep breath, and she released her grasp on the blanket, allowing it to fall on the ground and revealing her bloated stomach to Lord Xie.

"T-T-That's!!!"

Lord Xie stumbled backward with a terrified look on his face, looking as though he'd just witnessed a ghost.

"I am sorry for keeping it a secret from you, father. I am pregnant with Su Yang's child, and you'll be a grandfather soon..."

Plop

Lord Xie fell on his butt after tripping on nothing, nearly hitting the table with the back of his head, and he stared at Xie Xingfang's bloated stomach with his eyes popping out of its sockets.

"Are you okay... father?" Xie Xingfang was speechless after seeing Lord Xie's exaggerated reaction.

However, Lord Xie did not respond and continued to stare at her with a gawking look on his face.

"W-When? How long have you been pregnant? When did it begin?" Lord Xie asked her in a trembling voice after a long moment of silence.

"Right before we returned from the Abandoned Forest with the Purple Qilin's blood..." Xie Xingfang said. "It's been a few months since I've been pregnant."

"Heavens! Does my father know about this?!" Lord Xie then asked.

"Yes... Grandfather has known about it since the very beginning..."

"Then why did you keep it from me?" Lord Xie said.

"Look at how you're reacting. There's your answer," Su Yang said while shaking his head.

"I saw how you'd reacted previously, so I thought it would be for the best to give you some more time before telling you..." Xie Xingfang said, feeling a little guilty about the whole thing now.

Chapter 763 - Twins

Sometime later, Lord Xie finally calmed down and said to them, "Congratulations, Xing'er, Su Yang."

"Thank you, father." Xie Xingfang said.

"Do you know if it's a boy or girl yet?" Lord Xie then asked.

Xie Xingfang nodded and said, "It's a girl and a boy!"

"W-What?" Lord Xie's jaw dropped to the floor. "Twins?!"

Xie Xingfang nodded again, and she said while rubbing her stomach which was much larger than Lian Li's stomach despite being i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed a bit later, "Yes, I am carrying twins in my stomach right now."

"Heavens... my daughter is carrying twins..." Lord Xie mumbled in a dazed voice, yet a smile appeared on his face a moment later, and he even began chuckling uncontrollably.

"Seeing you laugh is kind of creepy," Su Yang said with raised eyebrows.

Of course, Lord Xie was too happy to care about Su Yang insulting him and continued to laugh regardless.

Sometime later, Su Yang and Xie Xingfang left the place so Lord Xie could continue the meeting with the other seniors.

However, after learning about the twins, Lord Xie was in no mood or the right mindset to continue the meeting so he decided to delay it until a later date.

Meanwhile, back inside Xie Xingfang's room, Su Yang said to her, "Aren't you relieved now that you told him the truth?"

Xie Xingfang nodded, and she said, "Yes. As I'd expected, his reaction was exaggerated. However, I can somewhat understand my father's feelings."

"By the way, I have been thinking about something, Su Yang..."

A perplexed look suddenly appeared on Xie Xingfang's face, and she looked at him with a somewhat hesitant gaze, seemingly having trouble voicing her thoughts.

After sitting on the bed, she spoke in a low voice, "I... I have been thinking about my father... about what will happen to the family once I leave this world with you. Because my mother passed away before she could give birth to a son, my father has placed all of his hopes on me to continue the legacy. However, once I leave this world..."

"You want to leave behind our son in this world so he can continue the family legacy, huh?" Su Yang said with a calm voice, as he'd already predicted this situation the moment he learned that Xie Xingfang carried twins in her stomach.

"T-That's right! But if you're not okay with it..."

"I don't mind," Su Yang interrupted with a calm look on his face.

"Really?" Xie Xingfang looked at him with wide eyes, as she didn't expect him to agree so quickly and easily.

"Really." Su Yang reassured her, and he continued, "If that is your desire, I will support it no matter what. Furthermore, we still have our daughter, so it's not as though we are leaving behind everything, and we might be able to return in the future."

"However, I still don't know if we can return to this place once we leave, so you have to decide whether you really want to leave him behind or not," Su Yang then said. "Are you willing to leave him behind and possibly never see him again?"

Xie Xingfang nodded with a resolute look on her face.

"Then so be it." Su Yang said, and he continued, "When are you going to tell your father?"

"I'll save the announcement for another day— most likely after he's born."

After lingering around for another hour or so speaking with Xie Xingfang, Su Yang left the Xie Family and went to the Burning Lotus Sect to cultivate with Wang Shuren and lecture her.

"How are your children, Su Yang?" Wang Shuren asked him afterward.

"Wu Min and Zhu Jiayi are growing up perfectly fine, whilst Lian Li and Xie Xingfang's stomach is developing nicely. As for Liqing..." Su Yang sighed before continuing, "It appears that she's infertile, so I'll have to concoct some pills for her."

"Infertility?" Wang Shuren's eyes widened after hearing that, and she said, "What kind of pill are you concocting? You can use any ingredients you can find in the Burning Lotus Sect to make the pill if needed."

"Thank you, but the Burning Lotus Sect won't have these ingredients. In fact, I doubt you can find them even in the Eastern Continent," Su Yang sighed.

And he continued, "While half of the ingredients can be found in the Eastern Continent, there are a few incredibly rare ingredients that might exist only in the Divine Heavens. However, I don't plan on waiting around until we return to the Divine Heavens, so I am going to visit the other continents to test my luck there if I cannot obtain them here."

"The other continents?" Wang Shuren looked at him with wide eyes, and she asked him, "Do you know where they are?"

"I only know of the Holy Central Continent and the Southern Continent. However, I have never been to the Western Continent nor the Northern Continent, so I'll need some help with those two places."

"Help? From whom?" Wang Shuren raised her eyebrows, as she doubts anyone in this world would have such knowledge.

"Well, I have someone who has probably seen the entire world already— and more than once," Su Yang said with a smile as Xiao Rong's image appeared in his head.

Sometime later, Su Yang traveled to the Heavenly Swan Sect to cultivate with Bai Lihua and Su Yin before returning to the Profound Blossom Sect a day later.

"Children, huh?" Wang Shuren looked down at her own stomach with a smile on her face.

"I won't be able to focus on improving my alchemy and reach the peak if I had children so I'll wait until I have reached my limits or become a top Alchemy Master before I ask him..." she mumbled in a low voice.

As much as she wanted to join the other ladies and have a child with Su Yang, she also couldn't just give up on her dreams to become a top alchemist in the Divine Heavens. Therefore, she'll focus on alchemy first before thinking about getting pregnant.

Chapter 764 - A Great Harvest!

"Master!" Xiao Rong jumped to her feet from the bed the instant Su Yang returned to the Yin Yang Pavilion and entered his room.

"Did you wait for me this entire time?" Su Yang asked her with raised eyebrows.

"Un." Xiao Rong nodded with an innocent face.

"You..." Su Yang was speechless. Did she want to do 'that' that much?

"Master, I have retrieved the ingredients from Lian Li's parents," Xiao Rong said as she handed him the storage ring they'd given her.

"Oh, thank you very much." Su Yang accepted the storage ring before putting it inside his robes.

"Lian Li's parents also told me to ask Master if they can see the baby once it's born," Xiao Rong added a moment later.

"I see," Su Yang nodded and said, "I'll be going to the Holy Central Continent again so I'll let them know myself later. Anyways, I need another favor from you."

"..."

Xiao Rong looked at him with a calm expression on her beautiful face, yet there was a subtle emotion within her gaze.

When Su Yang saw this, he smiled and said, "Don't worry, I'll give you your reward in a bit. I just want to know where the Northern and Western Continent is located."

"The Northern and Western Continent?" Xiao Rong tilted her head in a puzzled manner.

Su Yang then explained, "The land we're standing on right now is called the Eastern Continent while the place Lian Li and the other two came from is called the Holy Central Continent. As for Qin Lianyu, she came from the Southern Continent, and I want to know where the other two places are located since there should be five continents in this world."

"You have traveled and seen for yourself every land in this world, right? Then you must know about the Western and Northern Continent, as there's no way you would've missed such a large place."

After pondering for a moment, Xiao Rong nodded and said, "Yes, there are two other places besides the Eastern, Southern, and the Holy Central Continent."

"Good, because I will need your directions to those places later," Su Yang said to her.

Xiao Rong nodded her head.

"Anyway, since you have completed my request, I'll reward you now. Take off your clothes and go lay on the bed," Su Yang said to her a moment later.

"Yes, Master!" Xiao Rong quickly removed her clothes in a childish manner before folding them and putting them on the table in a neat and elegant manner, dumbfounding Su Yang.

A few moments later, Xiao Rong sat on the bed with her petite body completely n.a.k.e.d and anticipation in her gaze as she patiently waited for Su Yang.

Su Yang approached the bed, and he laid Xiao Rong on the bed.

He then used his hands to gently caress Xiao Rong all over her petite body for a few minutes before he used his fingers to gently pinch and rub the pink n.i.p.p.l.es on her small b.r.e.a.s.ts.

"Mmm..."

Xiao Rong laid still on the bed with her limbs spread while releasing a low m.o.a.n as she familiarized herself with the sensation of pleasure tickling her body as it'd been a while since she last experienced such a feeling.

After teasing Xiao Rong's small b.r.e.a.s.ts for a couple more minutes, Su Yang moved his hands lower on her body until he reached the small and closed slit between her slender legs.

"Aaah..."

Xiao Rong's m.o.a.ning grew louder once Su Yang began touching her little sister, and her cave began flowing with Yin Qi a few moments later.

"Hmmm... Although I cannot cultivate your Yin Qi, I cannot watch it go to waste..."

Su Yang then retrieved a glass vial and placed it directly below Xiao Rong's slit to collect her Yin Qi.

'Although the Yin Qi will degrade in quality over time, if I preserve it like medicine or pills, I can prevent it to a certain extent and save it for later when I can actually cultivate it.' Su Yang thought to himself.

While preserved Yang Qi or Yin Qi cannot last as long as preserved medicine or pills, it would last long enough for Su Yang to use it in the future.

Meanwhile, Xiao Rong had no idea what Su Yang was doing or why he was collecting her 'liquid', but she didn't care what he was doing as long as he continued to please her body.

The glass of vial filled up very quickly with Xiao Rong's Yin Qi, and once it was almost completely filled, Su Yang sealed it with a talisman before taking out another vial to continue collecting even more of Xiao Rong's Yin Qi.

A few hours later, Su Yang managed to fill 10 bottles of Yin Qi from Xiao Rong— or more precisely, Xiao Rong had released enough Yin Qi to fill ten whole bottles!

And while the bottles had barely enough space to fit two fingers inside, it was still a lot of Yin Qi.

"Okay, I'll end this here today," Su Yang said to Xiao Rong as he sealed the tenth bottle of Yin Qi.

Xiao Rong nodded, but her body was too sensitive to move, so she continued to lay on his bed even after it ended.

Meanwhile, Su Yang looked at the bottles of Yin Qi with a satisfied look on his face.

'What a great harvest. With this much Yin Qi, if I can somehow cultivate it, I would definitely enter the Sovereign Spirit Realm with ease and probably even the Divine Spirit Realm!' Su Yang thought to himself.

But alas, in order to cultivate Xiao Rong's Yin Qi, he'd need to improve his cultivation a lot more, and by the time he can cultivate Xiao Rong's Yin Qi, it wouldn't be as effective, but that's not to say it wouldn't

benefit his cultivation at all. In fact, he can probably still gain a few levels if he continues to collect Xiao Rong's Yin Qi!

Chapter 765 - Do You Think You Can Help Me Again?

"Xiao Rong, starting today, whenever I am free, I'll please your body," Su Yang said to Xiao Rong afterward putting away her Yin Qi.

"Okay!" Xiao Rong immediately agreed since she couldn't ask for anything more than this!

Sometime later, Su Yang went to speak with Liu Lanzhi about his small trip.

"Huh? You're going to the other continents again?" Liu Lanzhi looked at him with her eyebrows raised.

Su Yang nodded and said, "I need to collect some medicine for Liqing, and I highly doubt I'll be able to find them in the Eastern Continent."

"Liqing? Did something happen to her? Is she injured or sick? I hope she's okay..." Liu Lanzhi asked with a worried look on her face.

"Don't worry, it's nothing serious. She's only having trouble getting pregnant," Su Yang said.

"She's having trouble with pregnancy? Infertility?" Liu Lanzhi looked at him with a dumbfounded look, as she would've never imagined that Su Liqing would actually be infertile.

"That appears to be the case, so I am going to concoct a pill to heal her body," Su Yang nodded.

"I see... I didn't know such a thing existed in this world... Of course, in your case..." Liu Lanzhi showed a bittersweet smile on her face.

"Anyway, I am going to leave in a few days. If you need anything, let me know before then."

Liu Lanzhi nodded and said, "I am already used to operating the Profound Blossom Sect alone. You don't have to worry about me anymore, Su Yang."

"That's good to hear."

Once Su Yang left the room a few moments later, Liu Lanzhi sighed in a low voice, "If I don't learn to take care of the sect by myself, who else is going to protect the sect when you leave this world, Su Yang? It's not as if I can just find anybody to take your spot after you leave..."

Sometime later, Su Yang spoke to his family about his plans.

"Lian Li, you'd mentioned that you wanted to look at the other continents, right? Do you still want to come despite your condition right now?" Su Yang asked her.

Lian Li looked at her stomach for a second before nodding her head and speaking, "Of course. If I don't take this chance to explore now, I will no longer have that option once our baby is born."

"Very well, I'll be taking you with me then," Su Yang said.

After speaking with Lian Li and the other goddesses, Su Yang went to knock on Qiuyue's door, and he said to her from outside, "I'll be traveling to the other continents for a while. If you need me, you know how to contact me."

After a moment of silence, Qiuyue's voice resounded: "Okay."

Su Yang left her room shortly after to prepare for his journey.

A few days later, once Su Yang finished all of his appointments with the disciples, Su Yang brought Lian Li and Xiao Rong with him to the Holy Central Continent.

Meanwhile, Qiuyue stood by the window and watched as her flying boat disappeared into the horizon.

"Sister Lingxi... What should I do now?" Qiuyue sighed in a dejected voice.

Ever since Tang Lingxi left, Qiuyue has been feeling a lot lonelier, almost like she'd just lost a close friend, as she was used to having conversations with Tang Lingxi on a daily basis that she normally wouldn't be able to talk about with others, especially Su Yang, because she would be too embarrassed.

Sometime later, on the other side of the world, Su Yang and Lian Li returned to the Holy Central Continent.

"I didn't think we would return to this place so quickly after leaving. It almost makes me feel embarrassed to be here." Lian Li said with a bittersweet smile on her face.

A few minutes later, they entered the Lian Family's household.

"Where are my parents?" Lian Li wondered to herself.

"Why don't we call them?" Su Yang said before turning to look at Xiao Rong and nodding his head.

A moment later, Xiao Rong released a small portion of her aura, immediately filling the entire building with an overbearing pressure.

A few moments later, Feng Xindou could be seen flying towards them with somewhat messy clothes.

Lian Li raised her eyebrows after seeing her mother's appearance that looked like she'd just gotten out of bed. However, it was way past morning so it didn't make sense for her to wake up now.

Meanwhile, Su Yang immediately understood the situation and chuckled, "It seems like your husband is finally fulfilling his duties as your husband."

"Eh?" Lian Li looked at Feng Xindou with wide eyes as she finally understood the situation.

"I-I'm so sorry for appearing before you in such a fashion! We weren't expecting any visitors today..."

Feng Xindou hastily apologized to them, and she turned to look at Su Yang with a somewhat embarrassed look on her face, looking like someone who'd been caught in the act.

However, Su Yang remained calm and spoke, "Don't worry about it— we were the ones who came here unannounced. If you'd like, you can even return to finish your business. We have plenty of time, anyway."

"That won't be necessary..." Feng Xindou shook her head with a bittersweet smile.

Su Yang looked at her with a calm gaze, and he noticed a line of clear liquid flowing down her legs a second later.

Seeing this, he smiled and said, "The technique I gave your husband isn't something that can be mastered in just a few months; it'll probably take a few more years before you can be satisfied with him."

"A... A few more years...?" Feng Xindou looked at him with a baffled look on her face.

After a long moment of silence, Feng Xindou approached Su Yang and whispered in his ears, "I know this is extremely shameless of me but do you think... Do you think you can help me again just this once since you are already here? If I don't satisfy this unsatisfied feeling in my body, I might go crazy!"

Chapter 766 - Emperor Lian's Resolve

"Are you sure you want me to help you? What about your husband?" Su Yang did not immediately reject Feng Xindou's request and instead asked her that question.

"Don't worry, I'll talk to him about it so there won't be any problems," Feng Xindou said to him.

"Anyway, I'll be right back!"

Feng Xindou quickly returned to the bedroom where Emperor Lian was getting dressed, and she said to him, "Su Yang and Lian Li are here."

"What? What are the two of them doing here? I didn't expect them to show up until after the baby was born..." Emperor Lian said with a dumbfounded look on his face.

"I don't know why they're here, and there's no use in guessing when we can just ask them later."

Emperor Lian nodded and prepared to walk outside.

However, Feng Xindou suddenly stopped him and said, "Wait a second, dear."

"What is it? If you're talking about that, we can finish it once they're gone."

Feng Xindou shook her head and then said, "To tell you the truth, your techniques are absolutely weak and unsatisfactory, so I went ahead and asked Su Yang to help me relieve my Yin Qi just now, as I feel like I might go crazy if I do not relieve this feeling in my body."

Emperor Lian's jaw dropped when he heard her words. However, before he could even speak, Feng Xindou continued—

"I know you're working hard to satisfy me and trying your best to learn the technique as fast as possible, but I am simply left yearning for more every time we do it, and I don't think I can last any longer like this. Therefore, I suggest that we let Su Yang help me until you are able to satisfy me. This will probably sound like an excuse to you but I... I am really afraid of returning to that condition, and I'd rather die than to live that kind of life again!"

"..."

Emperor Lian closed his eyes with his fists tightly clenched together, clearly trying to resist his emotions.

Feng Xindou felt extremely guilty when she saw this, but she really wanted to relieve herself, especially if she might return to her crippled state again.

After a moment of silence, Emperor Lian took a deep breath and released it, relaxing his fists and body.

"I should be the one apologizing, my wife... for being unable to satisfy you. I thought that I was doing a good job because you didn't complain, but alas, to think I was only satisfying myself this entire time while you are feeling the complete opposite— I am truly sorry for being a useless husband..." Emperor Lian lowered his head at her.

"If you need someone else to relieve you, I won't blame you, nor will I see it as cheating. In fact, I would even have told you to do the same if I'd known about your situation earlier."

Emperor Lian then continued, "I also cannot bear to see you in that condition again, so do whatever you must. I'll continue to practice the techniques Su Yang gave me so I won't lose you permanently. Of course, even if you still decide to leave me afterward, I won't complain about it."

Feng Xindou covered her mouth when she saw this and even felt the urge to cry.

"You silly, I would never leave you. This is only a temporary treatment. Furthermore, Su Yang belongs to our daughter, Lian Li, and she is even bearing his child right at this moment. Even I am not shameless enough to go after the same man as my daughter."

Emperor Lian nodded, and the two of them went to greet Su Yang after they fixed their appearances.

"Once again, I am sorry for showing up in such an inappropriate appearance before," Feng Xindou said to them.

"Come over here, Su Yang. I would like to speak with you privately for a moment," Emperor Lian then said to him.

Su Yang nodded and followed him to an empty room.

"I have heard everything from my wife, and as much as I hate to admit it, I cannot satisfy my wife despite learning the technique you've given me, even doing the complete opposite. I am a complete failure of a husband. Therefore, I am asking you to help me satisfy my wife in my stead," Emperor Lian said to him with a serious look on his face.

Su Yang was speechless. Although this is not the first time he's had another man asking him to satisfy their wife, it is still an incredibly rare instance.

Emperor Lian continued to speak before Su Yang could open his mouth, "However, don't be mistaken, Su Yang. I am not giving you my wife! I am merely letting you 'treat' her until I can do it myself! And I swear it won't be long before you are no longer necessary in my wife's life!"

Su Yang smiled after hearing his words, and he said, "Are you sure? She might not want to return to your side if you make her wait too long."

Emperor Lian clenched his teeth together when he heard Su Yang's words, as that was what he feared the most in this situation.

"That won't happen!" Emperor Lian claimed in a confident voice.

"Oh? What makes you so confident? I'll let you know that I am also pretty confident in my experience with stealing wives from their husbands. If I am serious, I can steal Feng Xindou from you in a single night," Su Yang said with a villainous grin on his face.

"..." Emperor Lian's heart trembled after seeing Su Yang's evil grin, and he could somehow tell that Su Yang wasn't bragging nor joking. If Su Yang really wanted to take Feng Xindou from him, there was nothing he could do to stop Su Yang!

"I'm joking," Su Yang suddenly said, dumbfounding Emperor Lian.

"I really admire your ability to let another man go near your wife because I certainly wouldn't be able to do the same, so I won't steal her from you. I am satisfied with just Lian Li since she's an amazing woman."

"However, if you cannot master the technique before I leave this world in one year, I'll definitely steal her from you no matter what you say because I would be harming her— even killing her by letting her stay with someone who cannot help her condition. Do you understand me?" Su Yang said to Emperor Lian with a serious look on his face.

Emperor Lian nodded with a resolute expression.

Chapter 767 - Dew of Life

After their private conversation, Su Yang and Emperor Lian returned to Lian Li and Feng Xindou's side.

"Are you okay?" Feng Xindou asked Emperor Lian afterward when she saw his sweaty face.

"Yes, I am okay." Emperor Lian nodded.

A few moments later, he turned to look at Su Yang and spoke, "Anyway, what do you want? Surely, you didn't come all the way here just to ruin my marriage, right?"

Su Yang smiled and said, "I need ingredients and treasures."

"Ingredients again? We gave you everything you asked for just a few days ago! Furthermore, we even gave you more than you needed!" Emperor Lian said with a dumbfounded look on his face.

"I know, but I need other ingredients this time, and there's a good chance I won't be able to find them in the Eastern Continent, so I am traveling to every continent to see if I can find them there."

Su Yang then handed Emperor Lian a list of medicines.

"Well? Do you recognize any of these?"

After looking at the list, Emperor Lian shook his head and said, "No, I don't."

However, Feng Xindou pointed to one of the names on the list and said, "I know of the Dew of Life; it's an incredibly rare treasure that has only appeared once 1,000 years ago, and it was auctioned off for a few hundred million spirit stones at that time."

"Oh? Who bought it? Do you know if they still have it or not?" Su Yang asked.

"If I recall correctly, it should be the Ruan Family. However, whether they still have the treasure or not I have no clue. I'm sorry that I cannot be more useful."

Su Yang shook his head and said, "No, this information is more than enough."

Sometime later, Feng Xindou turned to look at Lian Li and said, "I didn't get to say this before but congratulations on becoming a mother, Li'er."

"Thank you, mother."

"Anyway, I'll give the Ruan Family a visit right now. Once I return, I will help you." Su Yang said with his gaze on Feng Xindou.

Feng Xindou nodded and said, "I'll prepare myself in the meantime."

"Do you want to stay here with them?" Su Yang asked Lian Li next.

"Will you be okay by yourself? The Ruan Family is one of the top families in the Holy Central Continent. It might be difficult to meet with them if I am not with you," Lian Li said.

"My daughter is right, Su Yang. Although I won't call them unreasonable, the Ruan Family does not like outsiders. It will be better to have Li'er with you." Feng Xindou said.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Don't worry, I have a plan. They'll meet me even if they don't want to. Lian Li, you can stay here and spend some time with your family. After all, once you leave this world with me, you won't get such chances anymore."

"If you say so..." Lian Li nodded.

"As long as that plan doesn't involve destroying the Ruan Family or involve us..." Emperor Lian added afterward.

"By the way, where is this Ruan Family?" Su Yang then asked.

"You can find them 200,000 miles to the west within a city called Crane City," Feng Xindou said.

A few minutes later, Su Yang left the building with Xiao Rong and traveled to this Crane City.

Meanwhile, after talking with Lian Li for a little longer, Feng Xindou went to the bathroom to clean her body in preparation for her treatment.

As for Emperor Lian, he returned to his own room and retrieved the cultivation technique Su Yang gave him and began practicing it.

Sometime later, Su Yang arrived at Crane City with Xiao Rong sitting on his shoulder in her cat form.

"Where can I find the Ruan Family?" Su Yang asked the guards at the entrance before entering the city.

"The Ruan Family? They're currently away from the city to participate in the annual gathering with a few other families," said the guard.

"What business do you have with the Ruan Family? Depending on the urgency, I might be able to help," said another guard who belonged to the Ruan Family.

"I am here to talk to them about the Dew of Life," said Su Yang.

"Dew of Life?"

The guards looked at each other before they burst out laughing.

"Hahaha! Don't tell me you're here for their Dew of Life, too?" The guards then asked him.

"Don't even bother, young man! The Ruan Family won't hand it over to anybody no matter what you offer them."

Su Yang raised his eyebrows, and he said, "So they still have the Dew of Life? That's good to know."

"Of course. The Dew of Life is an incredibly rare treasure that is said to have the ability to resurrect even the dead. What could possibly be worth more than a person's life?"

"Resurrect the dead? Which idiot spread such a rumor?" Su Yang shook his head. "The treasure may be rare, but it isn't that powerful or has any practical use."

"Anyway, where can I find the Ruan Family now?" Su Yang then asked.

"Didn't you hear what I'd just said? The Ruan Family won't trade or sell the Dew of Life for anything! You're basically wasting your time right now," said the guard.

"That's fine. I have nothing else to do anyway," Su Yang shrugged.

The guard sighed, and he said, "You can find them at Wuxi City with the Gao Family and many other top families. They're only a few thousand miles to the north. Don't say I didn't warn you, though."

"Many thanks," Su Yang said to the guard before flying away, feeling quite fortunate that the Dew of Life existed in this world.

Sometime later, Su Yang arrived at a small city.

"Is this Wuxi City?" Su Yang asked the guards there.

"Yes. What business do you have here?"

"I'm looking for the Gao Family— mostly the Ruan Family that's with them, though."

"The Gao and Ruan Family? They should be at the Ancestral Pavilion right now," said the guard.

Chapter 768 Public Bathhouse

Hearing the guard's words, Su Yang asked, "Where's the Ancestral Pavilion? If you don't mind, can one of you take me there?"

Su Yang retrieved a handful of spirit stones and showed it to the guards there.

Gulp

The guards swallowed nervously when they saw the spirit stones, and they turned to look at each other with weird looks on their faces.

"I'll take you there, Young Master!"

"No! Let me take you there, my little ancestor!"

"Please! I am extremely tight on money right now! I really need those spirit stones!"

"I also need to feed my family!"

The guards quickly began fighting over each other for the opportunity to earn so many spirit stones in such an easy manner. Hell, Su Yang's request was so easy and simple to achieve that he was practically giving them free money!

However, while the guards fought each other, someone approached Su Yang from behind and tugged his robes.

"Hmm?"

Su Yang turned around to see a little girl who seemed to be only around 10 years old grasping his robes, and she was wearing ragged clothes and holding a dirty cup in her hands.

"Big brother, I can bring you to the Ancestral Pavilion, and I will only accept one of those spirit stones from you," she said to him with a pleading gaze.

"Eh?"

The guards immediately stopped fighting when they saw this, and they even felt a little shameful a few moments later.

"Okay. If you can bring me to the Ancestral Pavilion, I will give you a spirit stone." Su Yang nodded at the little girl with a handsome smile on his face.

He then turned to look at the guards and said, "As you can see, I already have someone helping me. However, since you guys were so eager to help me, I'll give you these. Make sure to share them evenly with each other."

Su Yang tossed the spirit stones at them, and the guards immediately went to catch them.

"Let's go, little girl." Su Yang said to her.

The little girl nodded and began leading him into the city.

However, before they could walk very far, Su Yang said to her, "Why don't we take a small detour? I am someone who likes cleanliness, and when I see a girl— no matter who they are— in such a rough appearance, my heart becomes uncomfortable."

The little girl looked at her own appearance before lowering her head in a dejected manner, "I am sorry, big brother, but I don't have anything else..."

"I know, that's why we are going to take a detour. Do you know any places where you can clean your body?" Su Yang asked her.

The little girl nodded and said, "There's a public bathhouse not too far away."

"Good, then let's go there now."

"But I need money to go there and I don't have any," she continued.

"Don't worry, I'll pay for it."

The little girl nodded again and changed directions.

A few minutes later, they arrive at this building that emitted a fragrance smell the moment they approached it.

Once they were at the counter, Su Yang placed a single spirit stone on the table before the worker there and said, "Clean this little girl here and you can have the entire thing."

The young lady working behind the desk immediately widened her eyes when she saw the spirit stone that was worth more than ten years of her pay.

"I-I get to keep this spirit stone? Really?" The young lady asked him in a doubtful voice, as it sounded too good to be true.

"You can keep it in your pockets while you clean her if you'd like," Su Yang said to her.

"Thank you very much, Young Master!" The young lady looked around to make sure nobody was watching before she quickly stored the spirit stone in her pockets.

"Do you have any clean clothes for her?" The young lady then asked him. "If we put these clothes back on her afterward, it would make cleaning her pointless..."

"I will bring back something by the time you're done," Su Yang said to her.

"Okay." The young lady nodded.

"Come with me, I'll make you clean again." The young lady then brought the little girl into the back and began cleaning her.

Meanwhile, Su Yang went outside to buy some new clothes for the little girl.

Inside the shower, the young lady asked the little girl.

"What's your relationship with that handsome young man?" she couldn't help but be curious about their relationship.

"I don't know him," the little girl responded.

"Eh? You don't know each other? Then why is he helping you? And why are you following him? He may look like a noble gentleman on the outside, but one's appearance can be very deceiving... Who knows, he might even be a pervert who's only cleaning you so he can eat you afterward!" The young lady exclaimed in a shocked voice.

"Eat me? Why would big brother eat me? I am not tasty..." The little girl asked in an innocent voice.

"Uhh... then what are you doing with him?" The young lady decided to ask her.

The little girl then explained the situation to the young lady cleaning her, clearing up some misunderstandings.

"The Ancestral Pavilion? Only the wealthiest people go there! As expected of someone who can afford to give away a spirit stone for something so simple without batting an eye!" The young lady then sighed, "Haaa... If only I had a husband as wealthy and handsome as that young man..."

Sometime later, the young lady finished cleaning the little girl, and she went outside to look for Su Yang for the clothes.

Once Su Yang handed her the clothes he'd just bought, she went back inside to dress up the little girl.

A few more minutes later, the little girl returned with the young lady.

When Su Yang saw the little girl's new appearance, he nodded with a smile on his face, "As expected, you look much better like that— almost like a young lady from some powerful family."

Chapter 769 Ruan Family

"Thank you, Young Master, for your business here."

The young lady bowed to Su Yang afterward.

Su Yang nodded and suddenly tossed a few more spirit stones at her, "That's your tip for doing a good job."

The young lady went to catch the glistening spirit stones in a hasty manner, feeling her heart throbbing like crazy afterward.

"Let's go. Now I feel more comfortable with you walking around me in that appearance," Su Yang said to the little girl as he turned around and began walking out of the building.

"T-Thank you, Young Master! I will never forget this!" The young lady working at the bathhouse kowtowed to him as Su Yang left the place with the little girl following behind him.

Once they were outside, the little girl continued to lead Su Yang to the Ancestral Pavilion, which took them a little over one hour to walk there.

On their way to the Ancestral Pavilion, Su Yang's handsome appearance and alluring aura attracted countless gazes in the streets from the pedestrians, mostly the women regardless of their age, almost like they have never seen a man as handsome as Su Yang before.

Sometime later, the little girl stopped walking before a massive building that had the sign 'Ancestral Pavilion' placed in the front in a domineering manner.

"Big brother, we're here. This is the Ancestral Pavilion," said the little girl.

"I see... Thank you for taking me here. Here's your spirit stone as promised," Su Yang said as he handed her a sparkling spirit stone.

The little girl smiled for the first time when she held the spirit stone in her small hands.

"Thank you, big brother. I will go now," she bowed to him before turning around.

However, Su Yang suddenly stopped her and said, "Wait a second, little girl. Why don't you stay with me for a little bit longer? I might have another job for you later."

Hearing the words, the little girl nodded with eagerness in her eyes.

"Good, then come with me." Su Yang said as he approached the building.

"Welcome to the Ancestral Pavilion."

One of the workers there approached Su Yang when he noticed them walking inside the building.

"Do you have a reservation with us today?"

"No, I don't," Su Yang responded with a nonchalant look on his face.

"Then are you here to dine with us today? Although it's full right now, if you wait an hour, there should be more room."

"I am not here to dine either. I am looking for the Ruan Family," Su Yang said.

"T-The Ruan Family?" The worker there looked at Su Yang with raised eyebrows.

"Which family do you belong to? Only those who are on the reservation lists are allowed to see them," said the worker.

Su Yang smiled and said, "I belong to the Su Family."

"Su Family? I have never heard of such a..." The worker suddenly paused in the middle of his sentence, and he stared at Su Yang with wide eyes.

"W-What is your name again, esteemed guest?"

"Su Yang," he said calmly.

"S-Su Yang!" The worker repeated in a shocked voice. Could this handsome young man be 'that' Su Yang?! Immortal Fairy Su Yue's rumored husband?!

"Here, why don't we make this easier?" Su Yang suddenly retrieved a storage pouch and began pouring out spirit stones in front of the worker like they're trash.

"Will you let me speak with the Ruan Family now? I won't take too long." Su Yang asked him with a seemingly friendly smile.

"Uhh... esteemed guest... this is..." The worker became speechless after seeing the small mountain of spirit stones in front of him.

Even the little girl couldn't help but stare at the glistening mountain with wide eyes.

"So? Which room are they in right now?" Su Yang asked the worker without even giving him the time to think.

"R-Right! They're on the 3rd floor— they've reserved the entire floor." The worker unconsciously responded.

"Thank you," said Su Yang as he walked past the worker and approached the staircase that was at the end of the building.

Meanwhile, the worker quickly began stuffing as many spirit stones as he could into his pockets before other workers there noticed the situation and also began taking some of the spirit stones.

Once Su Yang reached the third floor, he could already see over a hundred people in the room chatting with each other while eating their meals.

Furthermore, there was a stage in the middle of this floor, and there were two young Cultivators at the True Spirit Realm sparring with each other on the stage whilst the others watched and cheered.

"Hahaha! Get him Ruan Li!"

"Show him what you're made of, Gao Chen!"

People from these two families shouted loudly.

Su Yang looked at the side that was cheering for this 'Ruan Li' individual and quickly found someone that is likely to be the patriarch of the family— a middle-aged man with an overbearing aura and cultivation at the first level of the Sovereign Spirit Realm.

Su Yang then grabbed an empty chair before approaching this middle-aged man who had a beautiful woman sitting on his right side and a handsome young man sitting on the other side.

The people there quickly noticed Su Yang's presence because of his handsome face and powerful aura that could not be ignored.

"Who's that handsome young man? I don't remember someone like him belonging to any family here!"

"I also don't recognize him, but I can tell he's from a powerful family just from his aura alone!"

Sometime later, Su Yang arrived before this middle-aged man and placed the chair down.

After sitting down, Su Yang asked the middle-aged man with a calm look on his face, "Are you the head of the Ruan Family?"

The middle-aged man immediately frowned and said, "Who the hell are you? And which imbecile gave you permission to come here? Stop blocking my view of the stage and get out of here before I help you!"

Chapter 770 Negotiations

"You're going to kick me out without asking for my identity and purpose for coming here? You're quite the impatient man," Su Yang shook his head and turned to look at the beautiful woman beside him and continued to speak, "Is he like that in the bedroom, too?"

"YOU LITTLE BASTARD! WHO THE FUCK DO YOU THINK YOU ARE?!" The middle-aged man immediately stood up and roared. "HOW DARE YOU SPEAK TO ME, RUAN ZONGZE, IN SUCH A MANNER?!"

Meanwhile, the woman beside him covered her face with a shocked look on her face.

The entire place quickly turned dead silent, and even the two fighters on the stage stopped fighting to look at them with startled looks on their faces.

Su Yang remained calm and said, "My surname is Su— Su Yang, and I am here regarding the Dew of Life."

"Dew of Life? HAHHAHAHA!" Ruan Zongze burst out laughing after hearing Su Yang's words, even ignoring his name that sounded awfully familiar for some reason.

"So you turned out to be another idiot trying to obtain the Dew of Life from us, huh? Well, good luck with that! Because you'll never obtain the Dew of Life now! Not that you would've had the chance even if you didn't piss me the fuck off just now!"

"Are you sure? Perhaps we can negotiate. I might have a few things that might be of your interest." Su Yang remained calm and continued to speak as though there was still a chance for him.

"Negotiate? Which part of 'you'll never get it' don't you understand?" Ruan Zongze coldly snorted, and he continued, "Somebody get this idiot out of my face before I lose my damn mind!"

A few people in the room immediately stood up and approached Su Yang after hearing Ruan Zongze's words, but Su Yang did not budge even an inch and spoke, "Are you sure about that? You might lose out on the opportunity to obtain 5 Immortal-grade cultivation techniques."

"What did you just say? 5 Immortal-grade techniques?" Ruan Zongze raised his eyebrows in a surprised manner when he heard Su Yang's words, but he laughed again a moment later.

"Ahaha! As if you'd have 5 Immortal-grade techniques! Not even the Lian Family would have so many!"

"Oh? If you don't believe me, I can offer something else— like eternal beauty and youth for that beautiful woman over there." Su Yang suddenly turned his attention to the beautiful woman sitting beside Ruan Zongze.

"What?" Ruan Zongze's eyes widened with surprise by Su Yang's unexpected offer.

"I have a pill recipe that can grant any woman eternal youth and beauty without any side-effects, and they will work on even mortals who have not cultivated before. What do you think, Madam?" Su Yang did not even bother to look at Yuan Zongze and asked the woman directly.

The woman narrowed her eyes before asking, "Why are you asking me? Does it look like I have the ability to give you the Dew of Life? You're talking to the wrong person."

"I don't know if you have the ability or not, but I do know that you definitely have more authority than this loudmouth here just from your aura alone," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"Oh?" The woman raised her eyebrows in a surprised manner. "I'm impressed. And you are right, I do have more authority than my husband here because I wasn't the one who married into his family— it's the other way around. I am the Matriarch of the Ruan Family— Ruan Xiao Qing."

"You said your name is Su Yang, right? Are you related to Immortal Fairy Su Yue by any chance?" Ruan Xiao Qing suddenly asked him. "Judging by your aura alone, I can tell that you also have an extraordinary background."

"What?! Immortal Fairy Su Yue?! How can this rude prick be related to someone as elegant as her?!" Ruan Rongze exclaimed in a shocked voice, as did the other families in the room.

However, Su Yang did not respond to Ruan Xiao Qing's question and merely silently smiled at her.

"I see..." Ruan Xiao Qing narrowed her eyes at Su Yang.

"Since you are related to Immortal Fairy Su Yue, I cannot just send you away. You wanted to negotiate, right? I can do that. As for your offer, although this pill of yours is a very tempting offer for me, I cannot justify trading the Dew of Life for a mere pill. After all, the Dew of Life is my Ruan Family's most valuable treasure that has been with us for over a thousand years."

"What if I add in 5 Immortal-grade cultivation techniques into that offer?" Su Yang then asked.

"Five Immortal-grade cultivation techniques... Do you really have that many of them?" Ruan Xiao Qing asked him with a doubtful gaze.

"I have more than 5, and I'll even let you pick which techniques you want."

"Hmm..." Ruan Xiao Qing immediately turned silent to ponder, as 5 Immortal-grade cultivation techniques was an offer that cannot be ignored regardless of their status.

"I don't think we should trust him, my dear... Even if he's related to Immortal Fairy Su Yue, we still don't know his background, and we don't know if what he is saying is true or not. Who knows, maybe even the Immortal-grade techniques are fake."

Ruan Xiao Qing turned to look at Ruan Zongze and spoke in a low voice, "Do you really not recognize his name, Su Yang? That's Immortal Fairy Su Yue's husband!"

"What?!" Ruan Zongze exclaimed, and he immediately became silent.

Sometime later, Ruan Xiao Qing looked at Su Yang again and said, "If you don't mind, can we look at these Immortal-grade cultivation techniques first before we decide?"

"Sure." Su Yang nodded, and he continued, "If the pill and the Immortal-grade cultivation techniques aren't enough, I can offer you one more thing."

"Oh? What might that be?" Ruan Xiao Qing asked him with her interest piqued.

Su Yang smiled, and he spoke in a slow but clear voice, "Satisfaction."

Chapter 771 The Shorter Your Temperament...

"What do you mean by satisfaction?" Ruan Xiao Qing asked Su Yang a moment later.

"It means exactly what it sounds like— satisfaction. I am a Dual Cultivator, and I can tell at a glance that your body is currently struggling and filled with stress," Su Yang responded to her with a calm smile on his face. "Spend one night with me and I'll relieve all of that built-up stress you've accumulated."

And then he turned to look at Ruan Zongze who was standing there with a dumbfounded look on his face and continued to speak, "I can also tell that your husband here is only overbearing on the outside and is actually very tame and pathetic in the bedroom."

Su Yang's gaze on Ruan Zongze's fuming face lowered a little bit, and he chuckled, "And with his size, I doubt you would feel anything when he does it. Do you even feel anything? Perhaps you might still be a maiden."

"HOW FUCKING DARE YOU TRAMPLE ON MY DIGNITY AS A MAN BEFORE SO MANY PEOPLE AND MY WIFE!!!" Ruan Zongze roared, and his cultivation base that was at the Sovereign Spirit Realm suddenly exploded, causing the tables and chairs in the room to fly around.

"Your dignity? What dignity could you possibly have as a man when you cannot even satisfy your own wife? It's quite shocking that you would even be shameless to say something like that." Su Yang shook his head.

"I WILL FUCKING KILL YOU!" Ruan Zongze roared as he pounced at Su Yang.

"W-Wait!" Ruan Xiao Qing hurriedly shouted, but alas, Ruan Zongze was too enveloped in rage to hear anything now.

"Whoa!" Su Yang stood up and jumped backward when he saw Ruan Zongze rushing at him, landing on the stage behind him a second later.

Bang!

Meanwhile, Ruan Zongze smashed the chair Su Yang was sitting on into many pieces even though he knew Su Yang was long gone from that spot.

"Calm down, won't you?" Su Yang said in a calm voice from the stage, and he continued, "They say the shorter your temperament the shorter you are down there, and you're proving this saying right."

"FUCK YOU!"

Ruan Zongze roared before jumping onto the stage with Su Yang.

When the two youngsters on the stage saw this, they immediately jumped from the stage and ran back to their own family with fearful looks on their faces, looking like they'd just narrowly escaped death.

Su Yang shook his head at Ruan Zongze, and he said, "You really want to fight me? I don't usually waste my energy without a reason. How about this— if I win, you'll let me spend a night with your wife?"

"SCREW YOU!"

Ruan Zongze roared as he pounced at Su Yang once again.

Su Yang used the Nine Astral Steps to dodge Ruan Zongze's strikes with ease, and he spoke as he dodged Ruan Zongze's continuous assault, "Oh, right, I almost forgot. You have no authority, so I shouldn't even be asking you in the first place."

He then turned to look at Ruan Xiao Qing and spoke, "What do you say, Lady Ruan? I'm one of the best Dual Cultivators in this world— this is a once-in-a-lifetime chance..."

Ruan Xiao Qing was speechless, as this is her first time being courted before so many people and in such a fashion. It was so ridiculous that it was almost compelling!

Boom!

Ruan Zongze suddenly smashed the arena with his bare fists, creating a massive crack on the arena that went from one end of the stage to the other.

"Zongze, stop it right now! Are you going to bear responsibility for destroying the Ancestral Pavilion?!" Ruan Xiao Qing shouted at him.

"..."

Ruan Zongze immediately stopped moving, yet his expression still looked extremely terrifying and intimidating at this moment, and he was panting heavily, almost like he was out of breath.

"I'm sorry, Su Yang, but I'll have to decline your offer." Ruan Xiao Qing said, and she continued, "Now can we stop this nonsense and get back to business?"

"What?! Are you just going to let him go after everything he's said to me?! I'd rather die than let him trample on my dignity!" Ruan Zongze shouted while pointing at Su Yang, almost like a child who was trying to push the blame onto someone else.

"If you want a deathmatch with him then do it outside the Ancestral Pavilion. However, I'll tell you right now that you'll die if you fought him for real." Ruan Xiao Qing said, dumbfounding everybody there.

"W-What? I'll be the one dying? Not him?" Ruan Zongze stared at his own wife with a gawking look on his face.

"If you can't tell by now, he's been playing with you like a puppet. If the two of you fought for real, I doubt you'll be able to win despite your advantage in cultivation. Furthermore, there's no way someone related to Immortal Fairy Su Yue could be so simple."

Su Yang smiled after hearing Ruan Xiao Qing's words, and he said, "You're a smart woman. I want to help you even more now. However, I'll refrain from it until I get my hands on the Dew of Life later."

Ruan Xiao Qing raised her eyebrows. Why was Su Yang so confident that he'll obtain the Dew of Life from them? The way he spoke just now was as if the Dew of Life was already in his hands!

Ruan Xiao Qing then turned to look at the other families and bowed to them slightly, "I apologize for the commotion today, but the Ruan Family will retire from this gathering now since we have other business to take care of. We shall see you all again next year."

"Please follow us back to the Ruan Family, Su Yang." Ruan Xiao Qing said to him before she disappeared from the scene.

Su Yang didn't say anything and casually jumped off the stage to follow Ruan Xiao Qing, acting as if nothing abnormal had happened.

"Let's go, little girl." Su Yang said to the little girl who'd been silently standing by the entrance this entire time.

Chapter 772 A Quick Detour

Ruan Zongze remained behind for a few extra moments after his wife and Su Yang left the place, and he swept the crowd there with a furious look on his face.

'I will not let this go! Since you dared to step on my dignity as a man, I shall do the same to you! I don't care if you are Immortal Fairy Su Yue's husband or not— I will make you pay for humiliating me before so many people today!' Ruan Zongze cried inwardly.

Once they'd left the Ancestral Pavilion, Ruan Xiao Qing said to Su Yang, "Our family household is in another city a few thousand miles away if you don't mind."

"I know— I went there first to look for you." Su Yang nodded.

"We have carriages waiting outside. Please follow me." Ruan Xiao Qing said as she led the rest of the Ruan Family with her.

Meanwhile, everybody in the Ruan Family looked at Su Yang with admiration in their gaze, as they couldn't believe how calm Su Yang was despite being surrounded by them, especially after everything he's done to their patriarch.

If it were any of them in Su Yang's shoes right now, they'd be too afraid to even walk properly.

Sometime later, they arrived somewhere outside where a dozen luxurious carriages were stationed.

"You can stay in this one with your companion. We will arrive at the Ruan Family in about a day," said Ruan Xiao Qing with her fingers pointed to one of the carriages.

However, Su Yang shook his head and said, "I can take us back to your house in just a few minutes, but I can only bring one person with me."

He retrieved the wooden flying boat and tossed it on the ground.

"How about it? Your family can return a little later," he said.

Ruan Xiao Qing pondered for a minute before nodding her head, "Very well. Let me talk with the family."

She then went to speak with the Ruan Family.

"What? You're going to return to the family alone with that man?! Alone?! I won't allow it!" Ruan Zongze immediately refused.

Ruan Xiao Qing frowned and said to him in a cold voice, "What? Are you really that afraid that he might do something to me? Or are you doubting me, your own wife? Don't forget that you were the one who married me, not the other way around!"

Ruan Rongze immediately began sweating, as he feared Ruan Xiao Qing when she's angry.

"I am sorry for doubting you, my wife..." Ruan Zongze spoke in a tamed voice.

"Then I'll be leaving now. I'll see you all in a day!" Ruan Xiao Qing said as she turned around and returned to Su Yang.

"Okay, we can leave now."

Su Yang nodded and got onto the flying boat and turned to look at the little girl, "Come over here."

The little girl nodded and calmly entered the boat with him.

Once Ruan Xiao Qing was also on the boat, Su Yang controlled it and disappeared from the place instantly.

"Heavens! What kind of spiritual treasure was that?! I have never seen anything like that before!"

The people from the Ruan Family exclaimed in a shocked voice.

A few minutes later, Su Yang stopped the flying boat.

Ruan Xiao Qing spoke in a slightly trembling voice, "H-Have we arrived?"

"No, not yet."

Ruan Xiao Qing raised her eyebrows. Then why did they stop moving?

"I have to prepare the Immortal-grade techniques first. You think I carry them around like money?" Su Yang said. "So we're going to take a slight detour."

"Okay..." Ruan Xiao Qing nodded, silently wondering to herself where they're going to go.

A few moments later, Su Yang descended the flying boat before a massive mansion.

"W-Wait a second... this place is..."

Ruan Xiao Qing's eyes widened with shock when she saw the Lian Family's building in front of them. Although she has only been to this place once in her lifetime, she would never forget this familiar presence— the feeling of authority and power!

"T-This is the Lian Family's household! What the heck are we doing here?!" Ruan Xiao Qing exclaimed in a shocked voice as Su Yang got off the flying boat.

"Just follow me." Su Yang said as he casually approached the building with the little girl following behind him innocently, as she had no idea what kind of place they were at.

"W-Wait a second! We cannot just—"

However, before Ruan Xiao Qing could even finish her sentence, Su Yang opened the door and casually walked inside, acting as though it was his own home.

"Heavens..."

Ruan Xiao Qing swallowed nervously, and she decided to follow him a moment later.

"Hm? You're back already? Did you get the Dew of Life from the Ruan Family?" Lian Li was the first to greet Su Yang.

"No, I am currently in the process of obtaining it, but it shouldn't take much longer." Su Yang said.

"Oh? Who's that following you?" Lian Li looked at the cute little girl standing behind him.

"A little friend I picked up on the way. Anyway, I am going to go write up some cultivation techniques. Can you take care of my guests in the meantime? It'll only take an hour." Su Yang said.

"Okay." Lian Li nodded.

"Y-Your Highness!" Ruan Xiao Qing greeted Lian Li when she saw Lian Li after entering the building.

"Oh? Matriarch Ruan?" Lian Li raised her eyebrows. Did Ruan Xiao Qing follow Su Yang all the way here? Why? Does it have something to do with the Dew of Life?

"I'm sorry if I'm intruding, Your Highness, but I am..."

"It's okay, you don't have to explain yourself since you're with Su Yang." Lian Li said to her with a warm smile on her face.

"Uhhh..." Ruan Xiao Qing was dumbfounded by Lian Li's character, as she felt like an entirely different person for some reason. What happened to the prideful little princess from before? Did something happen to her that caused this drastic change in character?

Chapter 773 Twenty Immortal-Grade Techniques

Once Su Yang left the scene, Lian Li brought the little girl and Ruan Xiao Qing to the guest room where they were served tea and other snacks.

"Y-Your Highness, if you don't mind me asking, what's the Lian Family's relationship with that man, Su Yang? Is he really Immortal Fairy Su Yue's husband? He called himself a dual cultivator, too..."

"Indeed, Su Yang's a dual cultivator. I don't really know much about his relationship with Immortal Fairy Su Yue, but I guess you can call them partners. As for his relationship with the Lian Family..."

Lian Li pressed the robes around her stomach down to reveal the bump to Ruan Xiao Qing and continued, "He's the father of my child."

"GOOD HEAVENS!" Ruan Xiao Qing stood up from her seat while shouting in a shocked voice, as she would've never imagined that Lian Li and Su Yang would be in that kind of relationship!

"H-He's a dual cultivator, right? That means he should have a lot of cultivation partners! Why did you pick someone like him to conceive your child?" Ruan Xiao Qing asked Lian Li with clear disbelief on her face.

"The answer to that question is actually quite simple," Lian Li spoke with a calm expression on her face, and she continued, "It's because I love him. And yes, there are other women besides myself in the family, but what does that matter? He may be a dual cultivator with many partners, but he loves all of us equally, and that's all it really matters for me and the others, I believe."

"I...I see..." Ruan Xiao Qing mumbled despite not really understanding Lian Li's feelings.

"As long as you are satisfied, Your Highness. I'm sorry if my remarks were rude." Ruan Xiao Qing said a moment later.

"I am more than satisfied," Lian Li said with a mysterious smile on her face.

Sometime later, Lian Li turned to look at the little girl who was calmly sipping on the tea in her hands this entire time.

"What is your name, little girl? And what is your relationship with Su Yang?" Lian Li asked her.

"Shi Yuchun," she responded after putting the tea down. "And... big brother hired me..."

"Huh? He hired you? For what?" Lian Li raised her eyebrows.

But alas, Shi Yuchun shook her head, "I don't know. Big brother only told me to follow him and he'll pay me."

"Uhhh..."

Lian Li and Ruan Xiao Qing looked at each other. If they didn't know any better, they would've immediately locked up Su Yang after hearing such words from the little girl.

"Although I'm not sure what he's thinking, Su Yang won't treat you badly," Lian Li said with a stiff smile on her face.

Shi Yuchun nodded, "I know. Big brother is very kind."

Sometime later, Feng Xindou entered the room.

"Oh? Who are these guests?"

"Y-Your Majesty!" Ruan Xiao Qing stood up and bowed to Feng Xindou in a hasty manner.

"You are... the Ruan Family? Oh, this must be about the Dew of Life. Did Su Yang already convince you to give the Dew of Life to him?" Feng Xindou asked her.

"Eh... N-Not yet... We're still in the middle of a negotiation."

"Is that so?" Feng Xindou nodded in a nonchalant manner, almost like she wasn't too interested in their affairs.

"If you don't mind me asking, why does Su Yang want the Dew of Life? What is he going to do with it? Although we have never used it, the Dew of Life is rumored to have the ability to revive even the dead!" Ruan Xiao Qing said.

"Now that you mention it, I also don't know why he wants the Dew of Life. Perhaps you can enlighten us, Li'er." Feng Xindou turned to look at Lian Li.

"Well... this is the situation," Lian Li proceeded to explain to them about one of Su Yang's partners who was having trouble conceiving, so Su Yang is going to heal her with those ingredients.

"Oh my... infertility? Now that's a harsh fate for most women..." Feng Xindou shook her head in a solemn manner.

"Infertility..." Ruan Xiao Qing also turned silent. As a mother of three children, she couldn't imagine what it would feel like to not have the ability to give birth as a woman, especially when most if not all women are expected to bear children by their partners.

Sometime later, Su Yang returned to them and said, "Okay, I am ready to go to the Ruan Family now."

"See you later, Su Yang." Lian Li said to him.

After leaving the Lian Family, Su Yang brought Ruan Xiao Qing and Shi Yuchun to the Ruan Family's household.

"Here are a total of 20 Immortal-grade techniques that I believe will greatly benefit the Ruan Family. Take a look at them." Su Yang said as he placed 20 scrolls on the table, dumbfounding Ruan Xiao Qing speechless.

"Twenty Immortal-grade techniques?" Ruan Xiao Qing wouldn't be surprised if there exists less than 20 Immortal-grade in this world, yet there were 20 of them laying on the table and she was only an arms-length away from them. It felt like she was almost dreaming at this moment.

A few moments later, Ruan Xiao Qing began looking through all 20 techniques.

'How am I supposed to pick which one I want? All of them are exceptional techniques that could change the foundation of the Ruan Family!' Ruan Xiao Qing cried inwardly afterward.

"Take your time, I'll go concoct the Beauty Preserving Pill in the meantime." Su Yang then sat down somewhere in the corner and pulled out an ordinary pill cauldron before he tossed in a few ingredients and began concocting the pill.

'He's also an Alchemist?! Is there anything this man cannot do?!' Ruan Xiao Qing stared at Su Yang's figure with a gawking look on her face, but she didn't have time to worry about Su Yang and continued to focus on the 20 cultivation techniques before her.

--

Author's Note: Check out my new novel 'Inferior Cultivation System' if you like OP MC, smart MC, knowledgeable MC, Systems, and face-slapping. Don't worry, it won't affect my release rate.

Chapter 774 This Is What I've Been Yearning For!

A couple of minutes later, Su Yang stood up and retrieved the pill from the cauldron, and he said, "Okay, I have the pill now. What about you? Have you decided on which technique you want in exchange for the Dew of Life?" Su Yang asked her afterward.

"What?! You're done already?! How's that possible! I may not be an Alchemist but I know it takes hours for one to complete a pill!" Ruan Xiao Qing exclaimed.

"Don't compare me to those losers. Take a look at the pill if you're doubtful."

Su Yang showed her the pink pill in his hands.

"That's..."

Ruan Xiao Qing became speechless again. Did he really concoct that pill in just a few minutes?

"Anyway, let me know when you're done." Su Yang said before walking to the couch.

"Come over here, little girl." Su Yang beckoned her with his hands after sitting down.

Shi Yuchun nodded and sat next to him.

"What is your name?" Su Yang asked her.

"Shi Yuchun," she said.

"Shi Yuchun, huh? Do you have a family?"

"No... They passed away last month," she responded.

"You have my condolences..." Su Yang said to her, and he continued, "Do you remember what I said to you before— that I want to continue to hire you?"

Once he saw Shi Yuchun nod her head, Su Yang continued to speak, "How do you feel about coming to work for me at my sect— the Profound Blossom Sect? You won't have to become a Cultivator and or a disciple. Instead, you'll do other stuff such as management and whatnot."

"If you work for the Profound Blossom Sect, I can promise you that you'll never have to beg for money or walk around in ragged clothes ever again."

'The Profound Blossom Sect? I have never heard of a place like that before...' Ruan Xiao Qing pondered to herself as she listened to Su Yang while trying to decide on her techniques.

"Okay," Shi Yuchun nodded her head without any hesitation.

"Good. Then I'll take you back with me to the Eastern Continent once we're done here." Su Yang nodded with a smile on his face.

"The Eastern Continent?!" Ruan Xiao Qing dropped the techniques and turned to look at him with wide eyes.

"Did I forget to mention that I am from the Eastern Continent? Well, not that it matters, anyway. Well? Have you decided on the techniques yet?"

"G-Give me some more time!" Ruan Xiao Qing quickly went back to looking at the techniques.

About ten more minutes later, Ruan Xiao Qing approached Su Yang with five of the twenty scrolls in her grasp and said to him, "I want these five Immortal-grade techniques."

Su Yang nodded and said, "Does that mean you're willing to trade the Dew of Life?"

Ruan Xiao Qing clenched her teeth slightly and nodded, "Yes!"

Not only does Su Yang know the Lian Family but he's technically a part of the Lian Family! There's simply no way the Ruan Family could refuse the Lian Family, especially after learning his reason for needing the Dew of Life.

"Very well..." Su Yang nodded.

"Wait." Ruan Xiao Qing suddenly said, and she continued, "I will only give you the Dew of Life if you give me everything that you'd offered me."

"Everything...?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows, but he was confused by her words. Instead, he was slightly surprised.

Ruan Xiao Qing nodded and said, "Do you remember what you offered me besides the pill and the Immortal-grade techniques? Well, I want that, too! I know you're Her Highness's partner, but you're a dual cultivator so it shouldn't matter, right? I want you to satisfy me!"

Su Yang smiled at her words and said, "Are you sure? What about your husband?"

"What about my useless husband? As you'd said, his thing is as small as his temperament! I won't be satisfied even if we did it all day. I was going to look for another man to satisfy me sooner or later!"

Although she didn't want to say it, Ruan Xiao Qing had already planned on having Su Yang satisfy her when she agreed to follow him back to the Ruan Family alone. It was only after meeting the Lian Family that she'd decided to fully commit to her plans.

Of course, Su Yang already knew this and he only pretended obvious of her desires. In fact, he knew that Ruan Xiao Qing wanted to cheat on Ruan Zongze purely from the way she looked and spoke to him.

"Well? What do you say?" Ruan Xiao Qing asked him again a moment later.

"Do I even need to give you an answer? I would be delighted to satisfy you instead of that man. In fact, you won't even notice his existence as a man after I am done with you!" Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

Su Yang then turned to look at Shi Yuchun and said, "I'll be right back. I am going to do some 'business' with her."

"Un." Shi Yuchun nodded innocently.

Sometime later, Su Yang entered Ruan Xiao Qing's bedroom.

'A dual cultivator, huh? I wonder what they'll do differently...' Ruan Xiao Qing wondered to herself as she removed her clothes and sat on the bed.

"Aren't you going to take your clothes off?" Ruan Xiao Qing asked Su Yang after seeing that he still had his clothes on when she was already naked on the bed.

"There's no need to be so impatient." Su Yang said as he admired her beautiful and slender body.

He then loosened his robes and allowed them to slide off his body.

"Oh my..." Ruan Xiao Qing covered her mouth from shock after seeing the majestic sword between Su Yang's legs, unconsciously comparing it with her husband's tiny dagger.

'The difference is too much! It's like comparing a mighty dragon to a baby snake! This is a real man! This is what I've been yearning for!'

A lustful smile appeared on Ruan Xiao Qing's beautiful face without being aware of it herself, and she swallowed nervously, feeling as though her entire body was burning with desire.

'If it's him, he'll definitely be able to satisfy me!' Ruan Xiao Qing cried inwardly.

--

Author's Note: Check out my new novel 'Inferior Cultivation System' if you like OP MC, smart MC, knowledgeable MC, Systems, and face-slapping.

Chapter 775 It's Like Comparing a Sword to a Tiny Needle!

After taking off his clothes, Su Yang approached the bed with an unfathomable aura around him, looking like some kind of divine deity in Ruan Xiao Qing's eyes.

Once Su Yang was standing before her with his dragon upright and straight like a pole, Ruan Xiao Qing swallowed again, feeling an overbearing coming from the mighty dragon that threatened to ravage her body.

"H-Hurry... put it inside me..." Ruan Xiao Qing unconsciously spoke what was in her mind, even spreading her legs willingly.

"No need to be impatient... Allow me to loosen your body a little bit since I doubt you'll be able to handle it."

Su Yang then laid next to Ruan Xiao Qing on the bed and began caressing her body with his hands, using his slender fingers to tease her body.

"Mmm..."

Ruan Xiao Qing closed her eyes to enjoy the burning sensation that was overflowing her body.

"It hasn't even been a minute and you're already this wet? I guess you really have been deprived of satisfaction for sometime..." Su Yang said to her with a smile on her face.

"Why else do you think I am doing this? I can't even release my frustration unless I do it myself!" Ruan Xiao Qing responded in an irritated tone just from remembering how useless Ruan Zongze was.

"Then allow me to help you..."

Su Yang sat on the bed and grabbed her legs before spreading them wide apart before lowering her mouth, kissing the sweet and juicy area between her legs.

"Aaah~!"

Ruan Xiao Qing moaned in a sharp voice when she felt Su Yang's tongue suddenly invaded her paradise.

"Yes~ This is it!" Ruan Xiao Qing exclaimed in a satisfied voice, even pressing on Su Yang's head with her hands.

'Is this a dual cultivator?! He can please me more than my husband who uses his whole body with just his tongue!' she cried inwardly, feeling her pent-up frustrations being released at a rapid pace.

A few minutes later, Su Yang placed Ruan Xiao Qing down and closed the distance between his big brother and Ruan Xiao Qing's little sister.

"What do you think? How does it compare to your husband's?" Su Yang asked her as he placed his majestic sausage right on top of her soaking wet slit.

"I...It's like comparing a sword to a tiny needle!" Ruan Xiao Qing responded in a panting voice.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "I don't mean our sizes. That's too obvious. I'm talking about our ability to pleasure— are you feeling satisfied? Do you want more?"

"I want more... I want your whole thing inside me!" Ruan Xiao Qing quickly responded with a yearning look on her face.

Su Yang nodded, and he moved his hips back a little bit before thrusting it forward again, shoving his thick rod inside Ruan Xiao Qing's tight cave in a single movement without stopping.

"AHHHH~!"

Ruan Xiao Qing released her loudest cry of delight yet, feeling incredibly satisfied with just the penetration alone, and Yin Qi gushed from her body.

"Haaa... Haaa... haaa..." Ruan Xiao Qing panted with her eyes rolled behind her head and her tongue sticking out like she was extremely thirsty.

"Here's some more!" Su Yang said as he began thrusting his rod in and out of her body.

"Oooohhh~! Mmmmm! Aaaaah~!!!"

Ruan Xiao Qing nearly fainted when Su Yang began moving his hips, and the only thing keeping her conscious awake was the constant feeling of pleasure that stimulated her body and brain.

Su Yang smashed Ruan Xiao Qing's body for the next few hours without much break, only allowing Ruan Xiao Qing to breathe for a few seconds after she climaxed before he began pumping Yin Qi from her hole again, relieving her of many years of sexual frustration in a single session.

"How do you feel?" Su Yang asked her at the end of their session.

"Do I... really... need to... answer that?" Ruan Xiao Qing mumbled in an exhausted voice.

Su Yang smiled and said, "You can go ahead and rest for a few hours before we continue with our trade. I'll be waiting outside for you until then."

"Okay..." Ruan Xiao Qing did not think about anything else and immediately fell asleep, as she has never felt so comfortable and tired at the same time before.

Su Yang left her room and returned outside a few moments later.

"Sorry for making you wait this long, but we will have to wait for a few more hours before we can leave this place. You can go to sleep if you're tired," Su Yang said to Shi Yuchun when he saw her half-asleep face.

Shi Yuchun nodded and laid on the couch, quickly falling asleep. Meanwhile, Su Yang went to the bathroom to clean his body.

Once he came back outside, he sat on the floor beside Shi Yuchun and began cultivating the Yin Qi he'd just absorbed from Ruan Xiao Qing.

However, after cultivating only for two hours, Su Yang suddenly opened his eyes and turned to look at the entrance to the room.

"Oh? You have returned already? What happened to the rest of the Ruan Family? Did you leave them behind to come back here faster?" Su Yang spoke with a smile on his face when he saw Ruan Zongze standing there.

However, Ruan Zongze ignored his questions and roared, "Where is my wife?!"

Luckily for Shi Yuchun, Su Yang had created a formation around her before Ruan Zongze appeared, so her peace was undisturbed by Ruan Zongze's loud voice.

"Your wife? Oh, she's inside her room right now. But I wouldn't disturb her if I were you." Su Yang said with a calm look on his face.

"What? Why not? What's she doing inside?" Ruan Zongze stopped in front of Ruan Xiao Qing's room and turned to look at Su Yang with a frown on his face.

"I don't know what else to tell you besides... if you open that door and disturb your wife, you'll regret it dearly."

Ruan Zongze swallowed nervously after hearing Su Yang's words, feeling an ominous feeling coming from the door in front of him.

--

Author's Note: Check out my new novel 'Inferior Cultivation System' if you like OP MC, smart MC, knowledgeable MC, Systems, and face-slapping.

Chapter 776 You Might as Well Be a Woman!

"You're definitely up to something again! I don't believe you!" Ruan Zongze said as he began reaching for the doorknob.

Seeing this, Su Yang sighed and said, "Don't say I didn't warn you if your marriage falls apart afterward because you didn't want to listen to me."

Ruan Zongze's movements immediately froze after hearing Su Yang's words. Their marriage would fall apart if he opened the door? What kind of nonsense is Su Yang talking about? There's no way something like that would happen!

Yet... Ruan Zongze did not dare to open the door and remained standing there for an entire minute.

"You... did something to my wife, didn't you? What did you do to her?!" Ruan Zongze turned to glare at Su Yang with bloodlust in his eyes.

"I didn't do anything to her," Su Yang shrugged.

"Fucking bullshit! I don't believe you! I am going inside!" Ruan Zongze resolved himself and began turning the knob on the door.

It was at this moment the door suddenly opened, and Ruan Xiao Qing walked out of the room with an angry expression on her face, looking like someone had disturbed her peaceful sleep.

"W-Wife... Are you okay?" Ruan Zongze asked her in a nervous voice after seeing her furious expression.

"I would've been if you didn't open your loud mouth!" Ruan Xiao Qing shouted at him, and she said, "Get out of here right now before I beat you!"

Ruan Zongze was baffled, as he couldn't understand why she was angry at him.

However, he didn't dare to oppose her and began walking towards the exit.

Su Yang chuckled when he saw this, and Ruan Zongze stopped to look at Su Yang.

"I won't forget this!" he growled in a low voice.

"What are you talking about? I was even kind enough to give you a warning— a warning that you'd ignored. You can only blame yourself for not listening to me." Su Yang shrugged.

"Che!" Ruan Zongze coldly snorted before leaving the room.

Once Ruan Zongze was gone, Ruan Xiao Qing turned to look at Su Yang and said to him, "Thank you for warning me and delaying him so that I had enough time to dress. It would've turned chaotic if he saw me naked." Ruan Xiao Qing said to him a moment later.

"Though, it wouldn't really have mattered that much if he saw me or not."

"Oh? Why is that?" Su Yang asked her.

"Because I am going to find a new husband— someone who can actually satisfy me. This is something that I have learned after my session with you, and I don't think I will be able to continue living my life deprived of satisfaction after experiencing that with you."

"I have been delaying our divorce because it would make things difficult between my Ruan Family and the family he came from, but I don't care anymore. I don't need a useless man as my husband!"

Su Yang nodded and said with a smile on his face, "I will give you my blessings ahead of time then."

Ruan Xiao Qing also smiled, and she said to him, "Of course, my first husband candidate will be you, Su Yang. What do you say? Want to become my husband?"

"Unfortunately, I already have my family, so I cannot join yours," he responded.

"I thought so." Ruan Xiao Qing said.

"But if you ever feel like visiting me again, my bedroom doors will always be open for you even if I have a new husband," Ruan Xiao Qing winked at him in an alluring manner.

"I will definitely keep that in mind."

"Anyway, let me bring you the Dew of Life now... Ah!" Ruan Xiao Qing suddenly released a weird noise when she began walking.

"I-I forgot about how sensitive my body is right now..." she mumbled afterward.

Sometime later, Ruan Xiao Qing returned with a small glass bottle in her hands, and inside this glass bottle was a single drop of liquid.

"This is the Dew of Life, I hope you weren't expecting more..." Ruan Xiao Qing said to him with an awkward smile on her face after showing him the Dew of Life.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Don't worry, I didn't expect any more than this."

"I really admire you, Su Yang. To give away 5 Immortal-grade cultivation techniques and the Dew of Life just to help with your partner's infertility."

"Lian Li told you, huh? Although the Dew of Life may be priceless in your eyes, there is nothing in this world that's worth more than my women's happiness," Su Yang said in a clear and calm voice.

"Nothing worth more than your women's happiness?" Ruan Xiao Qing stared at Su Yang with a slightly dazed look, and her heart began beating faster than just a moment ago, feeling an indescribable feeling after hearing such wonderful words!

"Now I want to become your woman even more after hearing those words," Ruan Xiao Qing said with a smile on her face.

Sometime later, Su Yang carried Shi Yuchun like a princess since she was still asleep and left the Ruan Family on the flying boat.

"Just you wait! I will definitely get my revenge sooner or later!" Ruan Zongze growled in a low voice after Su Yang left.

"Unless you want to challenge the Lian Family and Immortal Fairy Su Yue, you should forget about your revenge," Ruan Xiao Qing suddenly appeared behind him and said.

"M-My wife!" Ruan Zongze jumped back from being startled. "W-What do you mean by that? He's related to the Lian Family?!"

"Not only related, but he's technically 'the' Lian Family!" Ruan Xiao Qing said.

"Anyway, you can stop calling me your wife starting now because I plan on divorcing you." Ruan Xiao Qing suddenly dropped this shocking news.

"WHAT?! DIVORCE?! BUT WHY?!" Ruan Zongze exclaimed in a shocked voice.

"Because I want a real man as my husband!" Ruan Xiao Qing suddenly squatted and pulled Ruan Zongze's pants down and said in a cold voice, "Look at that small thing! And you dare to call yourself a man with that?! You might as well be a woman!"

Chapter 777 Pill of Rebirth

"Get out of my face! I don't want to hear a single peep from you!" Ruan Xiao Qing pointed at the door and shouted.

Ruan Zongze opened his mouth but no words came out, and he lowered his head in a shameful manner before walking out the door.

Meanwhile, Su Yang returned to the Lian Family with Shi Yuchun beside him.

"Welcome back, Su Yang. Did you obtain the Dew of Life this time?" Lian Li greeted him shortly after he entered the building.

"Yes, this is the Dew of Life." Su Yang showed her the glass bottle with a single droplet of liquid inside.

"What...? That's the Dew of Life? There's so little of it!" Lian Li mumbled in a surprised voice.

Su Yang chuckled and said, "Don't let its appearance fool you. Even though it's only a droplet of liquid that's the size of an ant, it's a powerful treasure that is also one of the most important ingredients that is needed to cure Liqing's infertility."

"Is that so? How many do we need now?" she then asked.

"Eight more. There are nine ingredients required for the pill that'll cure her infertility, and it would be a miracle if we can even gather half of them in this world." Su Yang sighed.

"Is this cure really that powerful? It only fixes infertility, right? I cannot imagine why curing something that seems so simple would require such a list of valuable ingredients." Lian Li said.

"The Pill of Rebirth that I am preparing to concoct is not only for infertility, as it will reconstruct every organ within one's body, which includes their meridians and Dantian, essentially giving them a second chance in life. In other words, I can give a cripple who cannot cultivate this pill and he'll be able to cultivate afterward like he'd experienced a rebirth."

"There exists such a powerful pill?!" Lian Li was dumbfounded, as she has always believed that someone with a crippled cultivation body cannot be cured!

"Do you really need something so powerful for Sister Liqing's infertility, though? Aren't there other methods to cure her that don't involve the Pill of Rebirth? It might be quicker that way, after all."

"Yes, there are many other methods that can cure Liqing's infertility problem, and I can even do it in less than a single day if I wanted to. However, I want the best for Liqing, and the Pill of Rebirth is the best even if it might take a little bit longer since it will affect her cultivation and other things that will greatly benefit her in the long run. This applies to everyone in the family including you, Li'er. If there's a chance, I will opt for the best option for you if possible."

"Su Yang..." Lian Li nodded with a loving gaze.

Sometime later, Su Yang asked, "Where's your mother?"

"Oh, she's inside her room, and she told me to tell you that she's 'ready'." Lian Li said.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Okay, I will be with her shortly."

"By the way, this is Shi Yuchun, and she'll be working for the Profound Blossom Sect in the future so we'll drop her off before going to the other continents later."

"Okay." Lian Li nodded.

"Anyway, it's about time I go see your mother. I have been making her wait long enough," Su Yang said as he walked away.

"Un." Lian Li nodded.

"You can join us whenever you want. It'll be a unique experience." Su Yang chuckled as he disappeared into the hallway.

"Me? Joining your cultivation session with my mother?" Lian Li stared at Su Yang's disappearing back with a gawking look on her face, as she cannot even begin to imagine cultivating with Su Yang in the same room as her mother.

Sometime later, Su Yang knocked on Feng Xindou's room.

"Can I come inside?" Su Yang spoke from the outside.

"Yes! Come inside!" Feng Xindou responded a second later.

Su Yang then pushed the door open and walked into the room.

And to his surprise, Feng Xindou pounced on him like a tiger in heat the moment he stepped foot inside the room.

"Su Yang... I know you're purposefully teasing me by making me wait so long after agreeing to satisfy my body..." Feng Xindou said to him with her body naked and with Yin Qi flowing down her legs like a river.

"As an Empress, you should learn to be more patient," Su Yang said to her while Feng Xindou removed his clothes for him.

"Who cares about that? I am not the Empress in the bedroom— only a dissatisfied woman yearning for satisfaction!"

Su Yang chuckled and said, "I like the way you think."

He then lowered his body and scooped Feng Xindou's body off the ground before carrying her to the bed like a princess.

After tossing her on the bed, Su Yang immediately spread her legs and inserted his rod into her cave, as it was already wet enough without any foreplay.

"Aaaaah~ Yes! This is it! This is the feeling of satisfaction that my body has been longing for!" Feng Xindou released a satisfied moan as Su Yang ravaged her lustful hole with his beast.

A few hours later, Feng Xindou laid on the bed with her body twitching and her hole leaking with Yang Qi.

"Thank you, Su Yang..." Feng Xindou mumbled to him in a low voice.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Don't even mention it. This is simply 'treatment'. Nothing more, nothing less."

Feng Xindou nodded.

"Anyway, do you want to remain here while I continue treating you or would you like to move to the Profound Blossom Sect in the meantime? It'll be a lot more convenient if I can treat you whenever you need it without needing to travel a million miles. Of course, it doesn't require much effort for me since I have the flying treasure. It'll be all up to you." Su Yang asked her.

"Hmmm... Give me some time to think about it." Feng Xindou said.

"Okay." Su Yang nodded.

Chapter 778 Returning to the Southern Continen

"Take your time to rest and think about my suggestion. I'll be visiting the other continents in the meantime," Su Yang said as he left the bed and the room shortly after.

"Are we ready to leave?" Lian Li asked him after seeing him return.

"Yes. Let's return to the Profound Blossom Sect for now." Su Yang nodded.

Sometime later, Su Yang brought Lian Li and Shi Yuchun back to the Profound Blossom Sect.

"Su Yang, you're back already? That was much quicker than I'd anticipated." Liu Lanzhi said when he entered her room.

"I am only dropping off someone before I continue my business. This little girl here is named Shi Yuchun, and I picked her off the streets so that she can work at the Profound Blossom Sect." Su Yang introduced the little girl.

"You picked her off the streets?" Liu Lanzhi looked at them with wide eyes.

After a moment of silence, Liu Lanzhi asked, "I understand the situation... sort of. But what exactly do you want her to do in the Profound Blossom Sect?"

Su Yang then said, "I have realized this long ago but I never mentioned it since it doesn't matter in our current situation, but the Profound Blossom Sect has no workers. The disciples are currently taking turns cleaning the sect and other miscellaneous things, but if we can hire normal people to do that, they'll have more time to focus on cultivation instead."

"Hmm... Now that you mention it, we haven't hired anybody to maintain the sect since our drama with the Million Snakes Sect..." Liu Lanzhi pondered.

A few more moments later, she nodded, "Okay, I will start hiring more workers to help maintain the sect starting today. And this little girl here can be our first worker."

"What should we do about their salary?" Liu Lanzhi then asked.

"I'll let you decide on that."

Su Yang then turned to look at Shi Yuchun and said, "Starting today, you will be working for the Profound Blossom Sect. Your job is simply to help maintain cleanliness within the sect and other things once you are experienced enough. If you want to cultivate, the sect will provide you with resources so if you want to become a disciple in the future, you can simply just ask the Sect Master here."

Shi Yuchun nodded.

"Then I'll be back later. I will be going to the Southern Continent now."

"See you later." Liu Lanzhi said to him.

"Goodbye, big brother."

Sometime later, Su Yang left the Profound Blossom Sect again with Lian Li and flew to the Southern Region.

Meanwhile, Liu Lanzhi said to Shi Yuchun, "Follow me, I'm going to assign you a living quarter and give you uniforms."

Shi Yuchun nodded.

A few minutes later, Liu Lanzhi gave one of the unoccupied buildings in the Outer Court to Shi Yuchun, dumbfounding the little girl who has never lived in such a big house before.

"I... I am going to live here?" Shi Yuchun asked Liu Lanzhi with clear disbelief written on her face.

"Yes, this will be your new home from now on." Liu Lanzhi nodded.

"I am very busy right now, so I will let one of the disciples give you a tour around the sect later. They can also tell you more about the Profound Blossom Sect. Until then, you can look around the house."

"Thank you, Sect Master." Shi Yuchun said to her.

"Don't thank me, it was Su Yang who brought you here." Liu Lanzhi said with a smile on her face before leaving the place to find a disciple to accompany Shi Yuchun.

Meanwhile, in the Southern Continent, Su Yang stopped the flying boat directly above a familiar-looking place— the Boar Tribe.

"This is the Southern Region, where Sister Liangyu came from?" Lian Li looked around the almost desolate area with her interests intrigued.

"Yes," Su Yang nodded, and he descended directly inside the city, dumbfounding the people there.

Although the people there were startled by Su Yang's sudden appearance at first, even mistaking him for an intruder, when they finally saw his handsome face and jadelike skin, they immediately recognized his identity.

"Y-You are! Our Savior!" The people there quickly gathered around Su Yang and Lian Li before kowtowing on the ground and praying to them as though they were gods.

"Stand up and bring me your chief. I want to speak with him." Su Yang said to them.

"Right away, Savior!"

A few moments later, a muscular man wearing clothes that stood out from the rest could be seen running towards their direction in a hurried manner.

"If my memories serve me right, you are Lebao." Su Yang looked at him with a calm expression on his face.

"That's correct, Savior." Lebao did not kneel on the floor like everyone else but still lowered his head when speaking to Su Yang, as he knew very well the difference between them. "What brought you back to the Boar Tribe, Savior?"

"It's nothing serious. I just want to see if you recognize any of the names on this list." Su Yang showed Lebao the list of ingredients.

A few moments later, Lebao shook his head and said, "Unfortunately, I don't. Perhaps the Dragon Tribe might know something..."

"I see... Thank you." Su Yang did not linger around the place and immediately went to the Dragon Tribe.

After Su Yang left, Lebao fell on the ground on his butt with his back soaked in sweat.

'Damn! Thank the heavens he left so quickly! I could hardly resist my emotions just now! Even though it's been many months since Qin Liangyu left the tribe and I already have my own family, my heart still burns every time I am reminded of what happened on that day!' Lebao sighed inwardly.

"I heard the Savior is here! Where's the Savior?!"

The ladies that Su Yang had cultivated with appeared sometime later in hopes to see Su Yang again, but alas, they were too late to the scene and Su Yang was already long gone.

Chapter 779 Spiritual Root of Restoration

After leaving the Boar Tribe, Su Yang traveled to the Dragon Tribe, and despite their little drama previously, Su Yang remained calm and descended in the middle of their tribe.

"Intruder! We have an intruder!" Someone immediately shouted after Su Yang landed on the ground.

Very quickly, the tribesmen from the Dragon Tribe surrounded them with their weapons raised.

"Who are you?! Do you have any idea where you are?! You are trespassing into our Dragon Tribe's territory! No, this is already considered as an invasion!" One of the warriors there shouted at them.

Su Yang glanced at this warrior and spoke in a nonchalant voice, "Where's Chief Long? I want to speak with him."

"You haven't answered my questions! Who are you?!" The warrior questioned Su Yang again, but he didn't dare to do anything too aggressive, as the aura emitting from Su Yang and the goddess beside him was so immense that they were having trouble breathing.

Su Yang shook his head and retrieved his storage ring before pulling out a large black weapon.

"T-T-That's the Black Dragon Axe! Why do you have our—" The place instantly turned silent, and the tribesmen there all looked at Su Yang with a terrified look in their gazes.

After a few seconds of awkward silence, another voice resounded there, "What's with this commotion?! Where's the intruder?!"

Chief Long's voice could be heard loud and clearly from not far away.

The tribesmen there made a path between Su Yang and Chief Long, and when Chief Long saw Su Yang's handsome face, he immediately fell on his butt with a terrified look on his face, looking like he was before the murderer who slaughtered his parents.

Chief Long could also feel a burning sensation in the arm that had been severed by Su Yang during their match before, almost like it was recalling the feeling it'd experienced on that day.

"Y-Y-You! What are you doing here?! My Dragon Tribe hasn't approached the Boar Tribe since then, much less bother them! In fact, the Dragon Tribe never left our own territory since then!" Chief Long immediately began telling Su Yang how 'well-behaved' the Dragon Tribe has been ever since their fight, fearing that he was there to kill them all.

"Calm down, I am not here to fight." Su Yang calmly approached Chief Long.

He then showed the list of ingredients to Chief Long and spoke, "Do you recognize any names on this list?"

"Uhh..."

Although he was dazed by the confusing situation, Chief Long took a look at the list regardless with an obedient look on his face.

A few moments later, Chief Long pointed to one of the names and said, "I-if I recall correctly, there is a family in the Desolate City that likes to collect the rarest resources in this world, and they'd obtained something with a similar name not long ago..."

Su Yang looked at the name Chief Long was pointing to—

"The Flower of Resurrection, huh?" Su Yang nodded. "I see, thank you."

"W-Wait!" Chief Long suddenly said as Su Yang turned around.

"What is it?" Su Yang stopped and looked at him.

"I also know a second name on the list! In fact, it's even within the Dragon Tribe! And I am willing to exchange it for the Black Dragon Axe you'd taken from us!" Chief Long gritted his teeth afterward.

There was a good chance that Su Yang might steal this treasure from him without returning the Black Dragon Axe to him, but Chief Long desperately wanted the Black Dragon Axe back so he had no other choice but to risk everything!

Su Yang raised his eyebrows when heard Chief Long's words, and without any hesitation, he tossed the Black Dragon Axe at Chief Long's feet and said, "Okay. If you really have one of the ingredients on this list, I'll return the Black Dragon Axe to you."

"Eh? Really? You won't go back on your words afterward?"

The results were so unexpected that Chief Long became doubtful. Surely, there must be some hidden agenda for Su Yang to return the Black Dragon Axe so easily.

"I will promise you that I won't take the Black Dragon Axe from you afterward, so you can stop looking at me with those eyes. The Black Dragon Axe may be a powerful Heaven-grade treasure, but it's useless in my hands. If you give me the ingredient, I'll give you the Black Dragon Axe and even something extra."

After pondering in silence for a moment, Chief Long stood up and nodded, "Okay. I will trust you. Follow me back to my place."

A few minutes later, Su Yang and Lian Li followed Chief Long back to his home.

"Wait right here for a moment." Chief Long said to them before entering his home.

Half a minute later, Chief Long returned outside with a small wooden box and spoke, "We found this sometime last year by chance when we went out hunting. After doing some research, we have learned that it was called 'Spiritual Root of Restoration'. Hopefully, it's the same one you're looking for."

Su Yang accepted the wooden box and placed it in front of his nose before taking a few deep sniffs.

"Smells like the right ingredient." Su Yang nodded a few moments later, leaving Chief Long speechless.

If he was in Su Yang's shoes, he would at least peek inside to make sure he wasn't being fooled. After all, what if he wanted to fool Su Yang for revenge?

Sometime later, Su Yang retrieved his storage ring and tossed the Spiritual Root of Restoration into it before taking out a pill and giving it to Chief Long.

"T-This is?" Chief Long looked at the pill with an ominous feeling.

"Consume this pill and your limbs will regrow within a year."

"W-What?!" Chief Long exclaimed in a shocked voice. Does such a powerful pill really exist in this world?

"You don't have to believe me if you don't want to. I am not the one missing a limb." Su Yang shrugged as he tossed the pill at Chief Long in a nonchalant manner.

Chapter 780 Desolate City

"T-Thank you, Senior!" Chief Long bowed to Su Yang in a respectful manner after catching the pill.

"By the way, which way is this Desolate City?" Su Yang asked afterward.

"Towards the east from this place." Chief Long said.

Su Yang nodded and returned to the flying boat with Lian Li.

A few moments later, they flew away from the Dragon Tribe and flew towards the east.

Once Su Yang was gone, Chief Long fell on his butt again and stared at the mysterious pill in his grasp.

There was no way for him to tell whether the pill is poisoned or not because he is not an alchemist, nor are there any alchemy masters in the Dragon Tribe. However, since Su Yang really kept his promise and returned the Black Dragon Axe, this mysterious pill might actually be exactly as he'd described it.

"Ahhh! Fuck it! I am already crippled! If this pill kills me then so be it!" Chief Long shouted before tossing the pill into his mouth and swallowing it whole.

Meanwhile, Lian Li asked Su Yang sometime after they left the Dragon Tribe, "So we now have 2 ingredients out of the required nine, and if this family has the third ingredient, we'll be almost halfway there. I think we are quite fortunate already. Don't you think so too, Su Yang?"

Su Yang nodded and said, "Yes, obtaining 2 ingredients out of nine is already very fortunate for us, and we still have two more continents to explore after this one."

Sometime later, Lian Li pointed at the large city a few miles in the distance and said, "Do you think that's the Desolate City?"

"We'll see."

A few moments later, they descended outside the city and approached the guards standing outside. However, unlike the Eastern Continent and the Holy Central Continent, there weren't as many people entering and leaving the city.

"Is this the Desolate City?" Su Yang asked the startled guards, as they have never seen someone with skin as pale and pure as theirs, nor have they seen any women even half as beautiful as Lian Li before.

"Y-Yes, this is Desolate City!" The guard nodded in a dazed manner.

Su Yang then said, "Is there a family known for collecting rare treasures in this city? I'm here to meet them."

"A family that collects...? Oh, you mean the Ji Family?"

Su Yang nodded and suddenly retrieved a handful of spirit stones before asking them, "Can you tell me a little more about this Ji Family?"

The guards' stared at the glistening spirit stones in Su Yang's grasp with a gawking expression, and they immediately began telling Su Yang everything they knew about the Ji Family.

"The Ji Family is one of if not the wealthiest family in the Southern Continent, and as you already know, they have a habit of collecting extremely rare treasures from around the world. If you have something rare to sell, they will buy it for much more than others would. However, if you want something from their collection, expect to pay much more as well."

"I see... Thank you. Here's something for your work." Su Yang handed the spirit stones to the guards before entering the city with Lian Li.

"Oh! One more thing, Senior!" One of the guards suddenly stopped them.

"Hm?"

The guard then turned to look at Lian Li before speaking in a nervous tone, "Don't tell them I said this but... The Ji Family has a son who is extremely perverted and well-known for harassing any beautiful women he sets his eyes on. If I were you, I would go there alone."

"Is that so? Thank you for your warning, but I am not someone who would hide my own woman in fear of another man. If he dares to even look at her inappropriately, I'll personally gouge his eyes out." Su Yang spoke with a cold smile on his face, causing the guards to shiver in fear.

Once Su Yang left the scene, the guards mumbled to each other.

"Just who was that man? To look down on the Ji Family in such a manner, he must have come from an incredibly powerful background."

"Did you see that goddess beside him though? Seeing her beauty has significantly increased my own standards! I would've never imagined that such a beautiful woman could exist in this world!"

"Are you kidding me? I don't think I'll be able to forget about her in this life!"

"Haaa... If I had a woman who has even 10 percent of that goddess' beauty, I would be able to die peacefully at any moment of the day!"

"Hahaha! Have you looked in the mirror before? I'd off myself if you can get a woman that's even one percent of that goddess' beauty!"

"Man, fuck you!"

Meanwhile, Su Yang and Lian Li just arrived at the Ji Family's household that took up an entire street.

"These people are definitely rich..." Lian Li mumbled after seeing the overly decorated building, feeling like she was staring at a building made of pure gold.

After standing around for a few seconds, Su Yang approached the doors, where a single guard that emitted the cultivation of peak Earth Spirit Realm stood.

"Hmmm?"

When the Earth Spirit Realm guard noticed Su Yang's approaching figure, he immediately began pondering to figure out Su Yang's identity.

'I have never seen this man or the woman beside him before, but... they're definitely experts! The aura they're emitting is stronger than every single Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivators that I have encountered before!' The guard thought to himself.

"Welcome to the Ji Family, esteemed guests. How may we assist you today?"

The guard bowed to them in a respectful manner.

"I'm here to do business with the Ji Family. I may have some treasure they want, and they might have something that I want. Are they home?" Su Yang asked the guard.

"Yes, they are. Please follow me to the guest room whilst I notify the Ji Family of your presence."

Chapter 781 Ji Family

After following the guard to some spacious room with a single long table and a couple of chairs, the guard said to them, "Please wait here for a couple of minutes while I notify the Ji Family of your presence."

Once the guard left the room, Lian Li turned to look at Su Yang and asked him, "What kind of treasure do you intend on trading them for the Flower of Resurrection?"

"Just a few things that definitely don't exist in this world," Su Yang responded with a smile on his face.

"Huh?" Lian Li looked at him with slightly widened eyes, and she asked, "If it doesn't exist in this world then how are you going to trade them?"

"Did you forget where 'Immortal Fairy Su Yue' came from? She brought a couple of things from the Divine Heavens to this world— things that cannot exist here as this world is still too immature. Since they are collectors, I'm sure it would fascinate them. If not, I can always pull out a Divine-grade technique as an offer."

"Oooh... I see..." Lian Li nodded with an enlightened expression on her face.

Meanwhile, somewhere inside the Ji Family, the guard that greeted Su Yang and Lian Li stood before three people— a beautiful middle-aged woman, a slightly muscular middle-aged man, and a chubby young man.

"We have unknown guests that appear to be important people? Did you not ask for their names?" The middle-aged man asked the guard.

The guard then realized that he'd forgotten about this and shook his head, "I was too nervous and forgot to ask about their background... Their aura... It's definitely extraordinary. I wouldn't be surprised if they were royalty, Lord Ji."

"Royalties, huh? Very well, I will meet them." The middle-aged man nodded before standing up.

"I will come with you, father." The chubby young man followed him.

However, the guard suddenly stopped them and said, "Y-Young Lord Ji... I think it would be for the best if you didn't go..."

"What? Why not?" The chubby young man frowned.

"Well..." The guard turned to look at Lord Ji with a gaze pleading for help.

"Hmmm..."

The middle-aged man narrowed his eyes and pondered, 'I have never seen him so nervous before. Perhaps the guests are actually royalty...'

After a moment of pondering, he nodded and said, "Ji Ran, stay here with your mother."

"What?! Why are you leaving me behind because of some words a guard said?!" Ji Ran the chubby young man exclaimed.

"And you! You may have been with us for a long time, but don't forget your position as a mere guard! How dare you speak such nonsense!" Ji Ran then pointed at the guard and started shouting angrily.

"Ji Ran, calm down." The middle-aged woman suddenly said, and she continued, "Although Zou Taixin may only be a guard, he's been working for the Ji Family even before you were born so show him some respect. Furthermore, he has greeted tens of thousands of guests for us. I don't think he would speak nonsense and I believe that there's a good reason why he'd said such words."

"Thank you, Madam Ji." Zou Taixin bowed to Madam Ji.

"Anyway, I can't keep the guests waiting for too long. I'll be back." Lord Ji said as he left the room with Zou Taixin.

As they approached the guests' room, Lord Ji asked Zou Taixin, "So? What is the real reason you don't want my son to be present? He may be hot-tempered at times, he is usually well-behaved before guests."

Zou Taixin showed a bitter smile and said, "I think it would be better for you to see the reason for yourself, Lord Ji, as my words would not do any justice."

"What? Why would you need to...? Actually, don't tell me. I'm even more interested in these guests now." Lord Ji said with a smile on his face.

Sometime later, they arrived at the guests' room.

"Thank you for being patient, I am Ji—" Lord Ji opened the door before speaking with a smile on his face.

However, when he saw Lian Li's otherworldly beauty and felt Su Yang's unfathomable aura, Lord Ji choked on the empty air from shock.

Cough *Cough* *Cough*

"Ahem!"

After clearing his throat a few coughs later, Lord Ji spoke with an awkward expression on his face, "I-I apologize for that unsightly scene just now, esteemed guests. I am Ji Hong, the head of the Ji Family... May I ask for your identities?"

"Su Yang from the Eastern Continent," he responded with a calm expression on his face.

"E-Eastern Continent?!" Ji Hong's eyes widened with shock.

Lian Li then spoke without letting Ji Hong recover from his shock, "Lian Li from the Holy Central Continent."

"H-Holy Central Continent?! That place exists?!" Ji Hong nearly tripped over himself after hearing Lian Li's words, but he managed to hold onto the table and prevent his embarrassing fall.

Sometime later, when Ji Hong finally managed to get to his seat and sit down, he looked at Su Yang and Lian Li with a serious expression on his face.

'No wonder Zou Taixin said it would be for the best if my son had stayed behind! If he saw this goddess, who knows what he might do to offend them! And if they're truly from another continent, it means that they have the capability to traverse the Jade Sea! We cannot afford to offend someone like them!'

"A-Anyway, what brings you to the Ji Family? I was briefed that you would like to sell some treasures to my Ji Family and are possibly even looking for a treasure here. What do you have to sell? And what kind of treasure are you looking for?" Ji Hong spoke to them with a business-like expression on his face after calming down.

Su Yang nodded and said, "We are indeed looking for a treasure that you might possibly have, and we would like to exchange some of our treasures for it."

Chapter 782 You Should Become My Woman!

"I see... What is this treasure, exactly?" Ji Hong asked them a moment later.

"Do you have a treasure called 'Flower of Resurrection'?" Su Yang then asked.

"Flower of Resurrection?! So you are here for that treasure, huh..." Ji Hong sighed.

"Is there a problem?" Su Yang asked with raised eyebrows.

"Well, to be completely honest with you, esteemed guests, the Flower of Resurrection is the rarest treasure in our collection, and there are always people trying to obtain it. However, I am only willing to exchange the Flower of Resurrection for something of equal value or more, but alas, the Flower of Resurrection is a one-of-a-kind treasure..."

"If you're looking for one-of-a-kind treasures then you don't need to worry, as I have plenty of them right here..."

Su Yang retrieved Qiuyue's storage pouch before dumping out a couple of treasures on the table.

"T-This is!" Ji Hong stood up from shock when he saw these treasures on the table. However, he was shocked not because he recognized them. Instead, he was shocked because he doesn't recognize any of these treasures!

As one of the top treasure collectors in the Southern Continent, Ji Hong's knowledge regarding treasures is extremely vast so there are very few treasures in this world that he doesn't recognize. And in most cases, these treasures turn out to be one-of-a-kind treasures like the Flower of Resurrection.

And for there to be so many treasures that he doesn't recognize to gather in the same spot, it greatly shook Ji Hong's soul as a collector.

"FABULOUS!" Ji Hong shouted with his face full of excitement.

"If you don't mind, can I take a closer look at these treasures?" Ji Hong asked Su Yang a moment later.

"Be my guest," Su Yang nodded.

Ji Hong quickly walked to stand beside Su Yang and the treasures, but he didn't immediately look at the treasures.

Instead, he retrieved some kind of silk gloves and wore them on his hands before he began touching the treasures, almost like he was afraid of staining them even with his fingerprints.

Ji Hong proceeded to spend the next ten minutes looking through every single one of these unknown treasures with intense focus, leaving not even a single spot on these treasures unchecked.

Sometime later, Ji Hong placed the treasures down and took a deep breath before looking at Su Yang speaking, "Each of these treasures emits an aura that surpasses the Flower of Resurrection. I cannot imagine why you would want to exchange any of them for the Flower of Resurrection."

Su Yang smiled and said, "It's for my woman."

"Y-Your woman?" Ji Hong's eyes unconsciously turned to look at Lian Li.

"So? Are you willing to exchange for the Flower of Resurrection? You can decide." Su Yang asked him a moment later.

One would expect Ji Hong to immediately accept Su Yang's offer but he did not respond for a good second before asking, "If you don't mind me asking, where did you find these treasures? From the Eastern Continent? Or the Holy Central Continent?"

Su Yang shook his head and said, "It's from neither of these places."

"Huh? Then where did you find them?"

"Let's just say it was brought here by an Immortal from another world," Su Yang responded with a calm expression on his handsome face.

Ji Hong could not even find the proper expression to react to such words and merely stared at Su Yang in a speechless and gawking manner.

Suddenly, a small commotion could be heard coming from outside the room—

"Young Master! You cannot enter right now!"

"Get out of my way, you damn guard!"

Bang!

"Let me see what is going on here that I am not allowed to attend!" Ji Hong's son Ji Ran suddenly kicked the door open and walked inside in an overbearing manner.

And of course, as someone who is obsessed with beautiful women, Lian Li's otherworldly face was the first thing Ji Ran noticed after entering the room.

"Heavens! I have never seen a woman so beautiful in my life! Are you a fairy?! A real goddess, perhaps?! You should become my woman! I promise that I will treat you like a queen!" Ji Ran ignored everything else in the room and made his way towards Lian Li.

However, before he could even take two steps, a large figure blocked his path, causing Ji Ran to look up.

"F-Father?" Ji Ran mumbled in a dazed voice.

PAP!

Ji Hong suddenly raised his hands with his fingers spread and smacked his own son across the face, sending him flying out of the room in a vicious manner.

"Who gave you the permission to enter this room?! I'd specifically told you to stay behind with your mother!" Ji Hong pointed at Ji Ran and shouted.

"F-Father... I-I'm sorry..." Ji Ran immediately began sobbing like a baby.

"I don't need your apology! I need you to stay the fuck out of this room!" Ji Hong then slammed the door closed before turning to bow to Su Yang and Lian Li.

"I deeply apologize for my useless son's behavior just now, esteemed guests. He's an idiot who immediately loses his mind whenever a beautiful woman enters his sights. I will properly punish him later."

Su Yang smiled and said, "Fortunately for him, you'd stopped him, as I would've cut him down if he'd taken another step."

Ji Hong immediately began sweating after hearing Su Yang's words, yet he didn't dare to react angrily like one normally would if someone were to threaten to kill their son before them.

"Anyway, let's continue our business. Go ahead and pick one. I'm waiting." Su Yang said in a nonchalant manner afterward, almost like he didn't just threaten to kill Ji Hong's son just now.

"T-Then I will pick this one..." Ji Hong pointed to one of the treasures there with trembling fingers a moment later.

"Are you sure?" Su Yang asked him. "As a collector, you should be able to tell their worth even if you don't recognize them. The one you'd picked just now is the cheapest one."

"I know..." Ji Hong nodded with a sweaty forehead, and he continued a second later, "I don't mind. Really."

Chapter 783 Collection Room

"If that's your choice, I won't say anything else. Bring the Flower of Resurrection here so we can finish this deal," Su Yang said.

However, Ji Hong did not immediately leave and said instead, "D-Do you think I will be able to buy the other treasures? Even if it's just one or two of them, I'd love to add them to my collection! Please! I beg of you!"

Seeing Ji Hong begging him, Su Yang said, "Just like you, I have no interest in money. However, if you have some treasures that I want, I can consider exchanging my treasures for them."

"Oh, thank you! Thank you very much! Please, follow me to the collection room! The Flower of Resurrection is there, too!"

Su Yang nodded and proceeded to follow Ji Hong into another room that was on the other side of the house.

Sometime later, they stood before a giant door that emitted an ominous feeling.

Su Yang frowned slightly when he saw this, and he said, "What is inside this room? Why do I sense a cursed presence coming from within?"

"What do you mean by that, Senior? Cursed presence?" Ji Hong looked at him with a genuinely confused look on his face, clearly having no clue what Su Yang was talking about.

"Cursed presence? I also don't feel anything," Lian Li also said.

"It's not unrealistic that you can't sense it because I am currently using a unique technique that allows me to see things one normally is unable to see," said Su Yang, who had the All-Seeing Celestial Eyes activated, which allowed him to see the cursed presence.

"Li'er, it'd be for the best if you stay out here just in case. The cursed presence is pretty intense but it won't be able to harm us because of our cultivation base. However, it might be a different case for the vulnerable little one inside your body right now." Su Yang said to her.

Lian Li nodded, "Okay, I'll stay out here until you're done."

"I'm really sorry about this, Seniors... I collect treasures from all around the world, and most of them I don't have any information on, so I might have picked up a cursed treasure or something, but it was definitely not intentionally..." Ji Hong immediately began apologizing.

Su Yang shook his head and said, "Don't worry about it, I am not blaming you. Cursed treasures are incredibly rare, and not many people know how to spot them even where I am from so I definitely don't expect people here to know about their existence."

"Thank you, Senior! And once again, I apologize for all of this..." Ji Hong nodded.

A few moments later, Ji Hong took a minute to deactivate the formation that was protecting the collection room before opening the door.

"Thank you for waiting, esteemed guest." Ji Hong said to him afterward.

Su Yang narrowed his eyes slightly at the cursed presence that was oozing out of the open door. However, no matter how intimidating it may appear, Su Yang has experienced cursed presences that were many times more powerful.

Thus, he entered the collection room with Ji Hong with a calm look on his face.

The instant Su Yang entered the collection room, he could feel the temperature in the room drop sharply, feeling almost like he'd been transported into a snowy area with cold breezes.

The collection room itself was quite vast with many display cases properly placed inside, looking like an expensive jewelry store. But instead of jewelry, there were rare treasures being displayed.

"Feel free to look around, esteemed guest. If you see something that you like or are interested in, please let me know. The Flower of Resurrection is towards the end of the room."

Su Yang nodded and proceeded to look through the treasures in the room while ignoring the cursed presence that quickly surrounded him, almost like it was trying to analyze his existence.

'Hmmm, although these are definitely top-grade treasures in this world, I don't need any of them...' Su Yang thought to himself until he noticed a glowing red jewel sitting calmly in the middle of the room.

'This is...'

Su Yang narrowed his eyes at this red jewel that appeared to have some sort of liquid trapped in the center.

Ji Hong could tell that Su Yang was interested in the red jewel and said to him, "That's one of many treasures that I have no information on, and it was sold to me by some Cultivator who said he'd found it near a volcano that'd recently erupted. There appears to be some kind of liquid inside the jewel, but I do not dare to crack it open so I left it untouched."

Su Yang then said, "The liquid inside is the real treasure, as it's basically Yang Element spiritual energy that'd liquefy. This is perfect for someone like me. I'll exchange this jewel for one of my treasures, and once again, I'll let you decide."

"Thank you, esteemed guest! I will take it out for you now!"

Ji Hong quickly opened the display case and retrieved the red jewel from inside before handing it to Su Yang.

Su Yang in return allowed Ji Hong to pick one of his treasures.

Once the transaction was completed, Su Yang continued to look around for more treasure.

After a couple more minutes, Su Yang stopped walking again and stood in front of another display case.

"So this is the cursed treasure, huh? Its appearance doesn't match its powerful presence," Su Yang shook his head at the wooden sword in the display case.

"How'd you know this was a treasure?" Su Yang turned to ask Ji Hong a moment later.

"Oh, that? I thought it was only an ordinary wooden stick at first, but when the person who sold me this weapon tried to destroy it but failed, I knew it was a treasure." Ji Hong said, and he continued, "The person who sold me that treasure was a Cultivator at the peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm, but he was unable to make a dent on this wooden sword with a Heaven-grade treasure."

Chapter 784 - Cursed Treasure

"Do you mind if I try it?" Su Yang asked Ji Hong a moment later.

"Try? Try what?" Ji Hong raised his eyebrows in a puzzled manner.

"Try to destroy it," he responded with a smile on his face, and he continued, "Don't worry, I'll pay for this wooden sword even if I break it."

"If that's the case, I don't mind." Ji Hong nodded, feeling much more relieved after hearing Su Yang's second sentence.

"Good. We can continue the exchange after I see everything else." Su Yang said, and he returned to looking at the collection room that had over a hundred treasures.

Sometime later, Su Yang stood before the Flower of Resurrection, a glowing red flower that appeared to be being burned by flames without actually being burned.

"This is indeed the Flower of Resurrection," Su Yang nodded with a smile on his face. "Here's the treasure you wanted for it."

Su Yang then handed the treasure to Ji Hong.

"Thank you very much for your business, esteemed guest. Allow me to take it out for you."

A few moments later, Ji Hong retrieved the Flower of Resurrection and placed it inside a wooden box to preserve its quality before handing it over to Su Yang.

"Then let's finish our last exchange with the cursed sword," Su Yang said as he approached the cursed sword.

However, right as Ji Hong tried to open the display case, Su Yang suddenly said, "Wait a second."

"Is there something wrong?" Ji Hong asked.

"Cursed treasures have a consciousness of their own, and it can tell that I want it, so it wants to challenge me. If you touch it now, it might try to harm you."

Hearing Su Yang's words, Ji Hong immediately jerked his hands back in a startled manner, almost like he accidentally touched something too hot.

A moment later, Su Yang opened the display case and grabbed the wooden sword with Sword Qi protecting his body.

Shaaaaaa!

The moment Su Yang touched the wooden sword, black smoke began coming out, almost like it was scorching his skin.

"E-Esteemed guest! Are you okay?!" Ji Hong exclaimed in a startled voice, and he looked at Su Yang with a worried look on his face.

"Don't worry, it's not hurting me. The smoke is not because I am getting burned— it's because I am suppressing its cursed presence." Su Yang said, and he continued, "Let's go outside. I want to see if this cursed treasure is really that durable."

Ji Hong nodded and followed Su Yang outside.

"By the way, are you really okay with breaking it? It may be cursed, but it's still a treasure nevertheless..." Ji Hong asked him out of curiosity.

"If it breaks over something so simple, it isn't worthy of being called a cursed treasure." Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"Oh? You're back? How did it go?" Lian Li asked them after they left the collection room.

Su Yang nodded and explained to her their current situation.

"That wooden stick is the cursed treasure? Unbelievable..." Lian Li said as she looked at the wooden sword that was slightly trembling in Su Yang's grasp. If it was laying in the middle of the street, she would've definitely treated it as trash and ignored it.

"How are cursed treasures even created?" Lian Li asked a moment later.

"Nobody really knows, but because cursed treasures always have their own consciousness, people believe they are spiritual treasures that have turned evil after gaining its own consciousness." Su Yang said.

And he continued, "Some spiritual treasures will gain their own consciousness naturally whilst some spiritual treasures are born with their own consciousness."

"I see..." Lian Li nodded.

Sometime later, they arrived in a vast and empty court somewhere in the Ji Family's household.

"Okay, esteemed guest. You can do whatever you want here." Ji Hong said to them.

Su Yang nodded and said, "The both of you should stand back. Things might get a little hectic."

Ji Hong and Lian Li proceeded to distance themselves from Su Yang.

Once they were distanced enough, Su Yang created a defensive formation around himself just in case.

A few moments later, Su Yang tossed the wooden sword into the sky and said, "If you can survive this hit, I'll make you my weapon!"

Su Yang retrieved another sword before releasing his Sword Will.

"Heaven Consuming Strike!"

An immense pressure appeared in the area, and the sword in Su Yang's hands gushed with black flames.

Su Yang swung the sword towards the sky a second later, sending a massive arc of black flames flying at the cursed weapon.

If the cursed weapon had a face to make an expression right now, it would definitely be a face filled with fear and shock.

WHOOSH!

The Heaven Consuming Strike consumed the entire cursed treasure and continued to fly towards the heavens, taking the cursed sword with it.

As for the defensive barrier Su Yang had created, it was easily shattered by his own technique.

Ji Hong's jaw dropped to the ground when he witnessed Su Yang's strength.

'If he wanted to, he could easily destroy an entire city or two with that technique!' Ji Hong cried inwardly.

Even Lian Li was not spared from the shock and cried inwardly, 'Heavens! He had such a powerful sword technique?! If he'd used that during our spar... I wouldn't be standing here right now!'

Su Yang remained standing there afterward, and he stared at the sky, almost like he was waiting for the cursed sword to come back down.

"I don't think that cursed treasure would be able to survive such an attack..." Ji Hong mumbled in a dazed voice.

"I doubt even a Divine-grade treasure would be able to survive that..." Lian Li also mumbled.

However, to their surprise, they could see a small dot in the sky that grew larger and larger.

"Heavens! It survived! The cursed treasure actually survived!" Ji Hong exclaimed when the cursed sword returned to the ground.

Chapter 785 - The Northern Continent

The sword in Su Yang's hands disintegrated into nothing after releasing the Heaven Consuming Strike, and Su Yang calmly watched as the cursed sword casually fell back to the ground with a somewhat arrogant feeling to it.

"Hmm... Not bad, as even a Divine-grade spiritual treasure would've been damaged by that attack just now." Su Yang said as he lifted his palm, using his spiritual energy to retrieve the cursed sword on the ground.

"Okay, as promised, I'll make you my weapon for now." Su Yang then tossed the cursed sword into his storage ring before returning to Lian Li and Ji Hong.

"The cursed treasure won't cause any trouble in the future, right?" Lian Li asked him.

"No, it won't. Although I don't know how cursed treasures are created, I know how to seal them or turn them back to normal spiritual treasures," Su Yang said in a calm voice. "Once we return to the Divine Heavens, I'll free it from its cursed state and see what kind of treasure it really is."

Lian Li nodded.

"Anyway, thank you for your time and exchanging the Flower of Resurrection." Su Yang said to Ji Hong as he retrieved the flying boat and boarded it.

"N-No! I should be the one thanking you, esteemed guests!" Ji Hong bowed to them.

Su Yang and Lian Li disappeared from the Ji Family shortly after, leaving Ji Hong speechless.

"Xiao Rong. Where is the Northern Continent?" Su Yang said out loud.

A few seconds later, Xiao Rong appeared before him after coming from somewhere and pointed in a certain direction.

Su Yang nodded and controlled the flying boat to fly in that direction.

A few minutes later, they arrived before a vast land with spiritual energy similar to the Eastern Continent if not a little bit better.

"So this is the Northern Continent, huh?"

After staring at the place for a moment, Su Yang turned to look at Xiao Rong and asked her, "Can you find the location with the strongest Cultivators here? Since the spiritual energy in this area is similar to the Eastern Continent, the strongest Cultivator should also be around the peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm and the Sovereign Spirit Realm."

Xiao Rong nodded and began using her spiritual sense to sweep the continent.

A few moments later, she said, "This way."

Su Yang then followed behind her.

Sometime later, they arrived at this unknown mountain peak that was so high up in the air that it was on the same level as clouds, even surrounded by them.

"Hmm... second level of the Sovereign Spirit Realm, huh? Not bad considering this place is only slightly better than the Eastern Continent." Su Yang mumbled after sensing this Cultivator's aura.

At the same time, the Cultivator that had been cultivating in peace also noticed Su Yang and the others' presence.

"Who are you?"

A cold voice resounded, and a tall shadowy figure appeared before them a few seconds later.

"I'm Su Yang from the Eastern Continent, and I may have some business here," he said.

"The Eastern Continent?"

The shadowy figure sounded slightly shocked, and it continued a moment later in a slightly more respectful tone, "What do you mean by you 'may' have business here? What do you seek in the Northern Continent, fellow Cultivators from the Eastern Continent?"

"We came to the Northern Continent in hopes of finding the things on this list. Let me know if you recognize any of the ones that aren't crossed out." Su Yang said as he handed the ingredient list to the shadowy figure with his spiritual energy.

"Hmmm..."

The shadowy figure looked at the list for a long moment before speaking again, "I do not recognize any of the names on this list, but that's most likely due to my lifestyle, as I haven't left this peak for over 1,000 years now. Therefore, you should find someone else to see if they can recognize it."

"Is that so?" Su Yang nodded and said, "Thank you for trying."

He then turned to look at Xiao Rong and said, "Find me the next strongest Cultivator."

Xiao Rong nodded and turned around, disappearing from the scene with Su Yang and Lian Li shortly after.

The shadowy figure sighed in a deep voice after Su Yang left, "I thought that I'd reached the pinnacle of cultivation in this world, but alas, it appears that I had been a frog in a well this entire time..."

"Thank you for opening my eyes, Cultivators from the Eastern Continent..."

Meanwhile, Su Yang stopped the flying boat above a massive pavilion sometime after leaving the unknown mountain peak.

"Who dares to fly above the Ning Family's household?!"

A loud voice boomed a few seconds later, and two Cultivators, presumably a couple, came out of the buildings and flew towards them a minute later.

"Who are you?! Do you know where you are?! You are trespassing in my— Ning Family's territory! This is considered an invasion!" One of the figures, a middle-aged man with sharp facial features shouted at them, and he was only at the peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm.

The other figure, a beautiful middle-aged woman, was surprisingly at the first level of the Sovereign Spirit Realm.

"Calm down. I don't know who you are because we are from the Eastern Continent, and we need some help looking for a few ingredients." Su Yang said in a nonchalant voice.

"What? The Eastern Continent? How is that possible?" The middle-aged man exclaimed in a shocked voice.

"Are you really from the Eastern Continent?" The woman also couldn't help but ask them.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Yes, and I am looking for the ingredients on this list."

The middle-aged man caught the list and looked through it.

"Do you recognize any of the ingredients on that list?" Su Yang asked them again a moment later.

"No, I don't." The middle-aged man said in a cold voice before tossing the list back to Su Yang, and he continued, "Now get lost!"

Su Yang narrowed his eyes at the middle-aged man.

'This man... he's lying.' Su Yang thought to himself.

Chapter 786 - Lotus of Awakening

"I know you're skeptical of our presence, but rest assured that we're only here for the ingredients on that list. If you truly don't recognize any ingredients on that list then we will leave peacefully. If you do recognize the ingredients or even have one of them, I am willing to exchange for it with my own treasures that will definitely not disappoint you." Su Yang said to them.

"Which part of 'don't recognize' do you not understand? I don't care what kind of treasure you have! Get out of this place before I force you!" The middle-aged man shouted, looking unfathomably angry for some reason.

Seeing this, Su Yang shook his head and said, "I understand that our arrival has bothered your fun time in the bedroom, but there's no need to be so angry. You can go ahead and continue your session. We can wait here until you're finished."

"YOU LITTLE—!"

Just as the middle-aged man was prepared to explode, the beauty beside him extended her arm and blocked him from charging at Su Yang.

"Honey?! Why are you stopping me?!" He turned to look at her with a puzzled look.

She shook her head and said, "I won't blame you for not realizing our situation because you're only at the Heavenly Spirit Realm, but those people are experts that far surpasses even myself, especially that young lady with the silver hair. If you attack them, who knows what might happen to the Ning Family afterward..."

"W-What?!" The middle-aged man exclaimed in a shocked voice, and he turned to look at Su Yang's handsome face with his body soaked in cold sweats.

The beauty then stepped forward and bowed to Su Yang, "Greetings, Seniors. This one is called Ning Menghua, and this short-tempered one beside me is my husband, Ning Hao. Since you are from the Eastern Continent, you probably don't know us, but we're the ruler of the Northern Continent."

"I hope you didn't take offense just now regarding my husband's attitude towards you, Seniors."

Su Yang silently looked at the beauty for a second before speaking in a calm voice, "We are the ones who intruded upon your territory and even disturbed your peace, so I fully understand."

"Thank you, Seniors. Now, regarding the ingredients on this list..."

Ning Menghua pointed at one of the names and said, "Not only do I recognize the Lotus of Awakening but it's in our possession. However, it is also one of our most precious treasures, and we never even thought about letting it go, much less exchanging it for something else..."

Su Yang nodded and said, "Perhaps this will change your mind."

He then retrieved a scroll from his storage ring before tossing it to Ning Menghua.

"This is?"

Ning Menghua accepted the scroll and took a peek inside at the contents.

"T-This is!"

Her eyes widened a moment later, her expression filled with shock.

"W-What's the matter? What is it?" Her husband Ning Hao was startled by her reaction.

"Take a look at it for yourself..." Ning Menghua handed the scroll to him a moment later before looking at Su Yang with a serious look on her face.

"T-This is a Divine-grade cultivation technique?!" Ning Menghua exclaimed in a shocked voice.

"That's right. It's a Divine-grade cultivation technique, and I am willing to exchange it for your Lotus of Awakening." Su Yang said to them with an enticing smile on his handsome face.

"..."

The Ning couple was speechless, as they were definitely tempted by this incredible offer. However, this offer also sounded too good to be true!

"Excuse me for doubting you, Senior, but we don't know if this cultivation technique is real or not, as we have never seen a Divine-grade cultivation technique before, only having heard about it in legends." Ning Menghua said to him.

"I understand. Then I shall give you an entire week with the cultivation technique so you can see for yourself whether it's real or not." Su Yang said to them.

"R-Really? You'll let us cultivate it for a week?" Ning Menghua looked at him with a dazed expression. "Aren't you afraid that we might not return it?"

Hearing her words, Su Yang smiled and said, "If that's the case, I will simply take it back from you by force— including the Lotus of Awakening."

"I...I wouldn't dare..." Ning Menghua trembled in fear after seeing the cold smile on Su Yang's face. She was confident that if Su Yang wanted to take their Lotus of Awakening by force, he could achieve it even right now.

"Then do we have a deal? If the Divine-grade cultivation technique turns out to be real, you'll exchange it with the Lotus of Awakening?" Su Yang asked them a moment later.

"Please give us a moment to talk about this, Seniors." Ning Menghua immediately began talking to Ning Hao about this exchange.

"What do you think? I am personally willing to exchange the Lotus of Awakening for this Divine-grade cultivation technique if it's real. After all, we can only admire the Lotus of Awakening with no real use for it. This Divine-grade cultivation technique, however, will without a doubt change our lives!" Ning Menghua said.

Ning Hao nodded and said, "I also agree with you. I'd rather have the cultivation technique."

"Good, then it's decided!"

Once they've come to a decision, Ning Menghua returned to Su Yang and said, "Thank you for your patience, Seniors. We have decided that we will be willing to exchange the Lotus of Awakening if this Divine-grade cultivation technique is indeed real."

"Very well. Then I shall return in a week to retrieve the Lotus of Awakening from you." Su Yang nodded.

"Please wait for a second, Seniors!" Ning Menghua suddenly stopped them as they were prepared to leave.

"What's the matter?" Su Yang looked at her.

"If you don't mind me asking, why do you need the Lotus of Awakening?" she asked him, as they haven't been able to find a proper use for this treasure yet.

Su Yang smiled handsomely and responded in a calm voice, "It's going to be a present for my woman."

"I... I see..." Ning Menghua nodded her head in a dazed manner, seemingly charmed by Su Yang just now.

Chapter 787 - Body Refiner

Su Yang left the Ning Family's territory after giving them the Divine-grade cultivation technique, but he did not immediately go to the Western Continent. Instead, he wandered in the Northern Continent with Lian Li and Xiao Rong, looking like they were sightseeing.

"What do you think of this place?" Su Yang asked Lian Li sometime later.

"It reminds me of the Eastern Continent, but it feels much more peaceful here for some reason," she responded with a pondering look on her face.

"That's probably because of the atmosphere here as well as the spiritual energy," Su Yang said.

"What does spiritual energy have anything to do with this?" Lian Li tilted her head, looking puzzled.

"There are different types of spiritual energy that have various effects in this world, and the Northern Continent just happens to have this type of spiritual energy that calms people down." Su Yang said.

"What?" Lian Li looked at him with wide eyes filled with surprise. "There exists such a thing? I didn't know that spiritual energy could cause such phenomenons! After all, the Holy Central Continent doesn't have anything like this!"

Su Yang nodded and said, "I'm not surprised since this world is very small. Once we go to the Divine Heavens, you'll be able to experience more of these phenomena, and some of them will straight up shock you."

"You say this world is small... but just how big is the Divine Heavens compared to this world? One can travel for a thousand years and wouldn't see every city in this world!" Lian Li said.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Well, if I say there are cities in the Divine Heavens that are larger than even the Holy Central Continent as a whole, what would you think?"

Lian Li's jaw dropped, and she mumbled in a dazed voice, "Cities that are bigger than the Holy Central Continent? I cannot imagine how one will be able to traverse such a vast world..."

Su Yang shook his head and said, "Although they may be incredibly rare in this world, flying treasures such as the one we're currently using are very common in the Divine Heavens, and almost every decent Cultivator has one."

"There are also teleportation formations located in almost every city around the world, allowing even mortals to traverse between cities and across the world with ease."

"Heavens... The Divine Heavens sounds like a mythical place... I cannot wait to see it." Lian Li mumbled in a wondering voice.

Sometime later, after they'd seen most of the Northern Continent, Su Yang controlled the flying ship to fly towards the Western Continent.

"Xiao Rong, do what you did before and look for the person with the highest cultivation base," Su Yang said to her.

Xiao Rong nodded and proceeded to spread her spiritual sense throughout the Western Continent.

A couple of moments later, she said, "I found him."

Xiao Rong flew towards this individual with Su Yang following her from behind.

Sometime later, they arrived at this seemingly boundless sea, and there was a half-n.a.k.e.d old man with an incredibly refined body that would shame most young people sitting in the middle of this sea directly on the surface of the water, almost like a weightless leaf on water.

And to their surprise, this old man was at the third level Sovereign Spirit Realm.

"Hmmm..."

The old man slowly opened his eyes and turned to look at Su Yang and Lian Li right as they stopped above him, and his gaze lingered on Xiao Rong for the longest before he spoke in a calm voice—

"How can I help you, guests from another Continent?"

"Oh? So you know?" Su Yang said with a smile.

"Of course... I know every Cultivator above the Heavenly Spirit Realm in this place, but I don't recognize the young fairies..."

Su Yang nodded and said, "I see... Anyway, I am Su Yang, and we're from the Eastern Continent, here to see if the Western Continent has some ingredients that we're looking for."

"Eastern Continent... What kind of treasures are you looking for?" The old man said, giving off the feeling that he was willing to help them despite being complete strangers.

"Here."

Su Yang showed the old man his list.

"Hmmm..."

The old man looked at the treasures before mumbling, "And what do you want me to do?"

"I'd appreciate it if you can tell me if you recognize any of the names on that list and if someone has it."

"I do recognize one of the items on this list, and I also know who has it. However, what do I get out of it?" The old man looked at Su Yang with a profound look in his gaze.

Su Yang looked at the old man with a pondering look for a moment before retrieving the cursed treasure that he'd recently obtained and said, "How about excitement? Although you are trying to hide it, I can tell from your eyes that look like someone who hasn't had a good fight in a long time."

"HAHAHAHA!"

The old man suddenly burst out laughing, and he said, "I don't mean to be rude, but I truly didn't expect someone at the Heavenly Spirit Realm to challenge me. I was expecting one of the two fairies to fight me instead."

"You want to fight me...?" Lian Li raised her eyebrows, and then she continued, "I may be at the Sovereign Spirit Realm but I cannot beat him who is 'only' at the Heavenly Spirit Realm, you know?"

"What? Is that true?" The old man looked at Lian Li with wide eyes.

Su Yang then jumped from the flying boat and hovered above the water.

"You're a Body Refiner, right? It's been a while since I've done this, but..."

Su Yang then removed the top of his clothes, revealing his refined body.

The old man's eyes widened with shock when he saw Su Yang's body. Despite having fewer muscles than him, Su Yang's body emitted this otherworldly aura, almost like it was a divine body of sorts.

Chapter 788 - Physical Abuse

"Since I am also somewhat of a Body Refiner myself, even though it's been a while since I'd last trained my body, I'd love to see how I fare against another Body Refiner." Su Yang said as he stored the cursed treasure back into his storage ring.

"You... What kind of training do you do to obtain a body like that?" The old man asked him with a somewhat dumbfounded look on his face, seemingly envious of Su Yang's divine body despite having a pretty admirable body himself.

"Me? I'm a Dual Cultivator," Su Yang said with a nonchalant expression.

"D-Dual Cultivator?!" The old man was fully shocked now. There was simply no way that a Dual Cultivator could achieve such a perfect body! One can only imagine how much time he must have spent in the bedroom to achieve such a refined physique!

After a moment of silence, the old man continued, "No weapons, no cultivation— only our physiques."

Su Yang nodded, "Sounds about right."

"And since I am the Senior one here, I shall let you strike first."

"Hahaha... I may look like this but I am actually much older than you imagine, young one." Su Yang laughed out loud.

"W-What?" The old man looked at Su Yang with wide eyes. How can someone at the Heavenly Spirit Realm be older than him yet remain such a youthful-looking appearance? Did he consume some sort of pill that alters his appearance?

"If you say so, then I will not be humble." The old man suddenly stood up and approached Su Yang.

Once he was standing before Su Yang, the old man pulled his fists back before punching Su Yang directly in-between his chest.

However, Su Yang did not move or even appear to have such thoughts and allowed the old man to punch him in the chest.

BOOM!

Su Yang was sent flying back from the impact, feeling as though he'd just been hit by a mountain.

"S-Su Yang!" Lian Li cried out loud in a shocked voice.

Because she has never seen this type of exchange before, it greatly confused her. Why did Su Yang allow the old man to hit him? Why didn't he dodge it or at least try to block it?

"Don't worry, I am fine." Su Yang said to her after he was sent flying, and he casually returned to his spot in front of the old man with a little blood coming from his lips.

After spitting the blood in his mouth out, Su Yang continued to speak, "This is how Body Refiners spar with each other. We will take turns hitting each other's body until one of us can no longer endure anymore."

"Anyway, are you ready?" Su Yang asked the old man afterward.

"Give me your best shot."

The old man puffed his chest out in a prideful manner.

Su Yang smiled and pulled his fist back before sending it flying forward.

BOOM!

The old man's chest caved inward when Su Yang punched him, and he was sent flying at top speed.

Splash!

The old man stopped moving many meters later, and he looked at the burning red mark between his chest with wide eyes.

"What a heavy punch! This young man is the real thing!" he mumbled in a dazed voice, yet his gaze was filled with excitement as he looked at Su Yang.

"HAHAHAHA! THIS IS IT! THIS IS EXACTLY WHAT MY BODY HAS BEEN CRAVING FOR! EXCITEMENT! PAIN! SATISFACTION!"

The old man roared as he flew back to his spot and punched Su Yang without stopping.

BOOM!

Su Yang was sent even further than previously.

"Don't say it in such an obnoxious manner! People will misunderstand you!" Su Yang said as he returned a moment later, returning the favor by sending the old man flying again.

"AHAHAHAH!"

However, the old man didn't care and continued to laugh as the two of them exchanged over a dozen punches.

"Heavens... I have never seen anything like this before..." Lian Li mumbled in a dazed voice as she watched Su Yang and the old man exchange blows like two maniacs who enjoyed torturing their own bodies.

Many minutes later, after exchanging over a hundred blows with each other, the old man finally kneeled on the surface of the water while panting heavily.

"I... I give up... Shit... This f.u.c.k.i.n.g hurts... I haven't felt such pain in such a long time!" The old man breathed heavily, feeling most of the bones inside his body had either snapped or shattered into many pieces.

However, Su Yang was feeling the same, as he had multiple bones inside his body broken from the spar.

"Take this pill... It'll heal your internal injuries..." Su Yang tossed a green pill at the old man before tossing one into his mouth and sitting down to cultivate the next moment.

The old man did not hesitate and also consumed the pill.

'What a powerful pill! Just who is this man?!' The old man was shocked inwardly when he felt the intense effects of the pill that quickly healed all of his internal injuries, even restoring his shattered bones in a matter of hours.

A few hours later, Su Yang and the old man stood up almost simultaneously.

They approached each other with a serious look on their faces.

Once they were standing before each other, they firmly shook hands and said at the same time, "Good fight!"

"It has been many thousands of years since I've last participated in such a spar, mostly because I don't like touching men even if it's just training, but today is an exception!" Su Yang said with a smile on his face, feeling refreshed all over his body from the physical abuse he'd just received.

However, this physical abuse also improved his body's sturdiness to a new level.

"Hahaha! It has also been a while for me! A little over 500 years to be exact since I've last experienced such pain! It's really refreshing! I can now die peacefully!" The old man said with a smile on his face.

Chapter 789 - Root of Revival

"Die? You can die if you want but only after you tell me where I can find the ingredient," Su Yang said to the old man.

"Oh, right, I nearly forgot about that matter since I was so absorbed in our exchange. The Root of Revival, an incredibly rare herb that can only be found in extremely harsh environments."

"Yes, and you claimed that you know who has it."

The old man nodded and said, "Indeed, I know who has it. However, before I tell you that, can you tell me your purpose for seeking out this treasure? I have taken a good look at the list, and almost every ingredient on the list was related to rebirth one way or another. Are you trying to resurrect the dead or something similar?"

"Resurrection?" A weird smile appeared on Su Yang's face, and he continued, "There's no such thing as resurrecting the dead. Once someone passes, they will remain dead. Perhaps reincarnation may exist, but real resurrection is most definitely impossible."

"Hmm..." The old man looked at Su Yang with a pondering gaze.

Su Yang shrugged and said, "I'm just a man looking for these ingredients so his woman can be happy."

The old man's eyes widened, and he asked, "A woman? You're doing all of this for a woman? I'd like to hear more about it if you don't mind since my interest is now intrigued."

Since it wasn't anything sensitive or crazy, Su Yang nodded and gave a brief explanation about Su Liqing's situation and how she cannot conceive his child, hence why he's going around the world looking for these ingredients.

"My heavens, this is the first time I've seen such dedication— traveling around the five continents just so you can i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.e your woman... I truly admire that..."

Su Yang smiled and said a moment later, "Well? Have you heard enough? Do you feel like telling me who has the Root of Revival?"

The old man nodded his head and said, "Yes. I just wanted to make sure that you weren't trying to do something immoral with the Root of Revival. The Root is Revival is with my family, but they might not be willing to hand it over for free."

"I never expected them to hand it over for free, anyway." Su Yang said.

"Good, then follow me. We're a little bit far so it might take a few days," said the old man.

"You can give us the directions and we'll take you with us in this flying treasure; it'll be much faster than flying normally."

The old man looked at the flying boat and nodded.

Sometime later, the old man boarded the flying treasure with Su Yang and gave him the directions to his living quarters.

"This is it," said the old man as they approached a vast city that was a similar size to Snowfall City where the Xie Family lived.

"Welcome to Immortal City and my Xian Family, fellow Daoist." The old man surnamed Xian said.

"Immortal City? What an overbearing name for a city without a single Immortal— don't you think so too?" Su Yang suddenly said.

"Hahaha! I know exactly what you mean! However, I was not the one who named it so there's not much I can say!"

"Anyway, I don't think I have introduced myself yet. My surname is Xian— Xian Ni."

Sometime later, they descended at the entrance of some large building within Immortal City.

The guards standing by the gates were alerted when they saw the flying treasure approaching them, but their wariness disappeared the moment they saw Xian Ni's old face and muscular body.

"Welcome back, Ancestor!" The guards knelt on the ground and greeted.

"Where are my children?" Xian Ni asked in a slightly cold voice, his atmosphere completely different from the silly old man before.

"They are currently in a meeting with some officials from the Nine Immortal Families," said the guards.

"Nine Immortal Families?" Su Yang shook his head at these people flaunting around the title 'Immortal' as though it was nothing.

However, this was none of his business and he was only here for the Roof of Revival.

"I see..." Xian Ni nodded, and he led Su Yang and his group into their territory a moment later.

"It's been over 200 years since I've last returned to this place yet it feels almost like I've only left recently. I guess this is what it feels like to be an 'Immortal' right? Of course, I am not claiming to be an Immortal, as that is still too far away."

"Real Immortality is nothing like this," Su Yang shook his head, and he continued, "As an Immortal, it can feel like only a few years have passed since you left your family, but alas, when you return, your family is no longer there and many generations have passed."

"..."

Xian Ni looked at Su Yang with a profound gaze.

'Why does it sound like he's speaking from experience?' he wondered inwardly.

Sometime later, they entered the building, and Xian Ni led Su Yang and his small group to the guest room.

"You can relax here for a bit while I speak with my family," Xian Ni said to them. "I'll have someone bring the tea and snacks in a bit."

"Take your time," Su Yang said as he casually laid on the couch like a lazy bum, leaving Xian Ni speechless, as he's never had such relaxed guests before.

Once Xian Ni left Su Yang in the guest room, he went to find the nearest servants and told them to serve their best snacks and tea to the guests.

However, the servants were puzzled by Xian Ni's presence because it's been over 200 years since he last visited the place, and most of the servants working there now have never seen Xian Ni before. Of course, once Xian Ni showed them his authority token, the servants immediately recognized his revered identity and kowtowed on the floor, apologizing to him for not recognizing him.

Chapter 790 - Ancestor Xian

Once Xian Ni dealt with the servants, he went to the meeting room and stormed inside without even knocking.

"Who dares to interrupt our meeting without knocking?! State your identity!" One of the people there shouted before even looking at Xian Ni.

However, Xian Ni ignored the guests in the room and looked directly at the middle-aged man sitting at the very end of the room, and he said, "Hey, this meeting is now halted. We have more important guests to entertain."

The middle-aged man's jaw dropped to the floor when he saw Xian Ni, but the other guests still haven't recognized Xian Ni just yet.

"Who the hell do you think you are?! That is His Majesty the Emperor you're talking to!"

"I have never seen you before! Who are you?!"

"All of you shut the f.u.c.k up!" The middle-aged man suddenly roared, instantly silencing the room.

He then stood up and walked in front of Xian Ni before bowing in a respectful manner.

"Welcome back, Ancestor."

"A-Ancestor?!"

The guests in the room immediately began sweating, feeling like they were being choked on by invisible hands.

"Xian Hantian, it's been 200 years." Xian Ni said with a nonchalant look on his face.

And then he turned to look at the guests and said, "It only took 200 years for the Immortal Families to forget my face? I'll be sure to visit your families in the near future to have a conversation with your ancestors if they're still alive."

"P-Please have mercy! We had eyes but couldn't recognize your excellence! We were wrong, Ancestor Xian!"

The guests in the room immediately got off their seats to kowtow on the floor.

However, Xian Ni ignored them and said to Xian Hantian, "Bring the rest of the family to the royal guest room. We cannot allow our guests to wait too long."

"Yes, Ancestor..." Xian Hantian nodded. However, he was inwardly shocked, as this is his first time seeing Xian Ni acting so impatient and even somewhat nervous. What kind of guests could possibly make their Ancestor act like this?

Once Xian Ni left the room, Xian Hantian turned to look at the people still kowtowing on the floor and said, "I would like to apologize for what happened today, as I am partially at fault too. As for the meeting, we'll put it on hold for now."

Sometime later, Xian Hantian went to gather his family before heading to the royal guest room where Xian Ni was waiting.

"What is this about, father? You know that I am very close to my breakthrough..." One of Xian Hantian's children said to him.

"If it wasn't important, why would I have stopped my meeting to gather all of you? The Ancestor is back! And he wants all of us to meet some guests!" Xian Hantian explained to them as they approached the royal guest room.

"What?! The Ancestor?! How many years has it been since he last visited us? 100 years? 200 years?"

"The Ancestor only shows up whenever he feels like it, but every time he does, something big happens." Xian Hantian sighed.

"Who do you think these guests are? People from the Nine Immortal Families?" Another one asked.

"The Nine Immortal Families may be the largest families in the Western Continent only below our Xian Family, but they are nothing in our Ancestor's eyes. I have already said this many times but the Ancestor is an unrivaled entity within the Western Continent— there is no family or sect that can stand up to him, much less a single person!" Xian Hantian said with admiration in his tone.

Sometime later, they arrived at the royal guest room, and Xian Ni was waiting outside for them.

"Greetings, Ancestor."

Everybody there greeted Xian Ni the moment they were close enough.

"Took you lots long enough. Come inside. I'll introduce you to our guests."

Xian Ni opened the door and walked inside.

Xian Hantian followed him as did everyone else there.

Inside the room, Su Yang and Lian Li were casually sitting on the couch sipping tea while Xiao Rong was laying on the bed with her eyes closed.

"What's this? You didn't have to bring the entire family here," Su Yang said with a smile after placing his teacup down.

"Hahaha, no need to be humble. Allow me to introduce you to my family, fellow Daoist." Xian Ni said before turning to look at his own family with a sharp gaze.

Xian Hantian immediately stepped forward after seeing his threatening gaze and said, "I am Xian Hantian, the current emperor who governs the Western Continent."

After Xian Hantian's introduction, the beautiful woman beside him stepped forward and said, "This humble one is Wei Wei, and I used to belong to one of the Nine Immortal Families before becoming a wife in this household."

After Xian Hantian's wife's introduction, the children stepped forward and introduced themselves. However, there were over a dozen of them, so that took some time.

Once everyone from the Xian Family introduced themselves, Su Yang said, "I am Su Yang from the Eastern Continent."

"The Eastern Continent?!" The Xian Family stared at him with wide eyes.

"I am Lian Li, and I came from the Holy Central Continent before following Su Yang."

"The Holy Central Continent!!!"

The Xian Family turned to look at her with even wider eyes.

Even Xian Ni was surprised by Lian Li's introduction, as he'd thought that she was also from the Eastern Continent just like Su Yang.

"Anyway, I don't know why that old man brought all of you here, but I am only looking for one thing—the Root of Revival," Su Yang said to them a moment later, and he continued, "Of course, I am not asking you to hand it over for free, and I am willing to exchange anything from this pile for it."

Su Yang then poured some of Qiuyue's treasures onto the table, shocking everybody there.

"If you are not fond of these treasures, I can offer you cultivation techniques— Immortal-grade cultivation techniques and even Divine-grade cultivation techniques. Take all the time you need to think about my offer."

After ending his sentence, Su Yang casually picked up the teacup and began drinking tea again.

Chapter 791 - Immortal Association

"The Root of Revival...?" Xian Hantian immediately frowned, and he spoke after a moment of silence, "I'm sorry, but that isn't possible..."

"Why not?" Su Yang asked him with raised eyebrows, remaining tranquil.

"You better explain yourself, Hantian..." Xian Ni narrowed his eyes at Xuan Hantian, who immediately explained himself.

"It's impossible not because I don't want to exchange the Root of Revival. It's impossible because I'd already donated the Root of Revival to the Immortal Association, who will be using the Root of Revival as a reward for their tournament."

"Immortal Association? Tournament?" Su Yang raised his eyebrows.

Xian Hantian nodded and said, "The Immortal Association is one of the largest alliances in this world with all nine Immortal Families managing in it, and they host a massive tournament once every 10 years. I'd donated the Root of Revival to them a little over 4 years ago, and they will be giving it along with a few other things to the winner of the tournament that will occur in three days."

"I see..." Su Yang nodded calmly.

"Daoist Su Yang, since the tournament hasn't begun, we can still ask the Immortal Association for the Root of Revival." Xian Ni said to him afterward.

"Yes, let's give them a visit now." Su Yang agreed.

"I am really sorry for this... If I'd known about this, I wouldn't have given it to them..." Xian Hantian apologized to Su Yang despite not being at fault and mostly because he was afraid of Xian Ni.

Su Yang shook his head and said, "Don't worry about it, I am not an unreasonable person, and I don't expect anyone to have the ability to see the future, so there's no need for you to apologize to me."

"Let's go." Su Yang said as he walked out the door.

Sometime later, once they were outside again, Xian Ni said, "Last time I checked, the Immortal Association was in this city and isn't very far away from this location so we don't need to use the flying treasure."

Su Yang nodded and said, "Lead the way."

Xian Ni then flew away, and Su Yang and his group followed him from behind.

A few minutes later, they arrived before this massive pagoda that had the words 'Immortal Association' grandly displayed on a golden sign in all four directions.

"W-Who are those people? They're emitting such a powerful aura! I have never felt anything so profound before!"

"Good heavens! Look at those two beauties! I have never seen anything even half as beautiful as them! They're true fairies! Real goddesses!"

The pedestrians were immediately attracted by Xian Ni's and Su Yang's unfathomable aura as well as the two goddesses' peerless beauty.

"How may the Immortal Association help you today, esteemed guests?" The worker inside the building also noticed their enormous presence and immediately approached them.

"I am here to speak to your head, Cang Shicai— that is if he's still the head manager of this place," Xian Ni said as he pulled out his authority medallion, shocking the worker.

"The Xian Family's Immortal Medallion!" The worker cried out loud after seeing this majesty medallion in Xian Ni's hands, as it was something only the emperor, Xian Hantian, and one other person would have— the Ancestor of the Xian Family who is also the number one expert in this world!

"P-Please follow me, Your Majesty!"

The worker bowed to him before turning around and walking in a stiff manner.

A few minutes later, they were brought to the highest floor in the pagoda where a single room existed.

"Senior Cang! You have guests!" The worker knocked on the door while shouting.

A moment later, a loud voice resounded, "Guests? I don't recall having scheduled appointments today! If there's no appointment, I won't see them! Send them away!"

The worker would normally listen to Senior Cang's words, but the person visiting today was the Ancestor of the Xian Family. There was simply no way he could send such a legendary figure away even if he was beaten to death.

"B-But Senior Cang! The guests are—"

"Did you not hear me just now?! I will not repeat myself for the third time! SEND! THEM! AWAY!" Senior Cang shouted from inside the room, sounding irritated.

Xian Ni shook his head at this, and he took a step forward before kicking the doors down and shouting back, "Who the f.u.c.k do you think you're trying to send away, you damn old man!"

"Y-You are?! Ancestor Xian?!"

The old man sitting behind the desk inside the room immediately stood up from shock after seeing Xian Ni's face and muscular body.

"W-What are you doing here? If I'd known it was you, I would've—"

"Ah, cut the crap, old man. I don't have the time to entertain you today since I am not alone." Xian Ni said as he pointed at Su Yang with his gaze.

"Who are they?" Senior Cang looked at Su Yang and the beauties behind him with wide eyes.

"They're my friends from another continent, and they're here regarding something my family handed you four years ago— the Root of Revival. Do you still have it?" Xian Ni asked him.

"A-Another continent? How is that possible with the Jade Sea... Ah, forget it." Senior Cang shook his head before continuing, "Anyway, the Root of Revival, right? Yes, I still have it. After all, it's one of the grand prizes for this year's tournament."

"Well, he needs it, and he's willing to exchange his treasures for it." Xian Ni said.

However, Senior Cang shook his head and said, "Although I may be the head manager, I cannot make such a big decision without the Nine Immortal Families' approval as well, as this rule is what keeps this place from collapsing."

"What if I say I want the Root of Revival— are you going to refuse me?" Xian Ni suddenly said with an overbearing pressure coming from him.

"A-Ancestor Xian... please don't make things difficult for me... When have I ever offended you?" Senior Cang sighed.

Chapter 792 - In Three Days

"Even if I take the Root of Revival by force, there's nothing the Nine Immortal Families can do about it," Xian Ni spoke with a grin on his face. "Am I right?"

Senior Cang's back was quickly soaked in cold sweats after hearing Xian Ni's words, and he said in a trembling voice, "Indeed, there's nothing we can do if you really decide to take the Root of Revival by force, but I don't believe you will do such a thing, Ancestor Xian."

"Hoh? You seem to know me very well. How confident are you in your own words, though?" Xian Ni said.

"I've known you since I was a young man. I know that you can be cold and aggressive at times, but you're actually very caring and gentle. I also know that you wouldn't do anything to lower the Xian Family's reputation." Senior Cang said with a serious look on his face.

Xian Ni narrowed his eyes at Senior Cang, yet he didn't say anything, almost like he was speechless.

"Since it has come to this, it appears that I have no other choice but to participate in this tournament and get the Root of Revival that way. I have a week to spare before I return to the Northern Continent so I can spare some time here," Su Yang suddenly said.

"Y-You'll be participating in the tournament? But only those who are younger than 50 years old may participate in the tournament!" Xian Ni said to him, believing that Su Yang was much older than he appeared.

"Is that the only requirement for me to participate? If that's the case, there'll be no problems." Su Yang said.

"The age requirement is just one of few requirements. You must also belong to an elite sect or a powerful faction, or you must have a recommendation from one of the Nine Immortal Families or the Xian Family." Senior Cang added.

Su Yang turned to look at Xian Ni and said, "You can recommend me, right?"

"O-Of course... If you really intend on participating in the tournament." Xian Ni nodded in a dazed manner.

"Don't worry, I don't plan on spending very much time in this tournament," Su Yang said with a mysterious smile on his face.

"Then it's settled. In three days, we'll be at the tournament." Xian Ni said.

Sometime later, Su Yang and the others left the Immortal Association.

"You... How old are you exactly?" Xian Ni asked Su Yang afterward.

"My physical body is only 18 years old," Su Yang said in a calm voice.

"WHAT?! THAT'S IMPOSSIBLE!" Xian Ni exclaimed in the air, and he stopped flying to stare at Su Yang with a shocked look on his face.

"How could you possibly train your body to such a level in 18 short years?! It had taken me hundreds of years to reach my level!" Xian Ni said.

"Don't compare me to you, old man." Su Yang said with a smile on his face. "You're looking at a real Immortal here, after all."

"What? A real Immortal? But you just claimed to be 18 years old. How can you be an Immortal at 18 years old?"

Su Yang then said, "Because I am someone who has experienced reincarnation, and in my previous life, I was an Immortal."

"You..." Xian Ni was speechless.

Even if Su Yang was telling the truth, why would he reveal something so shocking to him when they've only just met? Is Su Yang that confident that it wouldn't affect him even if he told everybody?

"No wonder why you claimed that resurrection was impossible yet you sounded quite confident that reincarnation was real..." Xian Ni said.

"Anyway, we can slowly talk about this once we've settled down somewhere more private and peaceful. Follow me, I'll bring you to my little paradise." Xian Ni said, and he proceeded to lead Su Yang and the others a couple of thousand miles away from Immortal City.

Sometime later, they arrived at this secluded area, where a beautiful pond with clear water and a small pavilion existed.

"This is where I usually come to relax. It's within the Xian Family's territory so you don't have to worry about unwanted guests." Xian Ni said to them.

"Thank you." Su Yang said as he took a seat in the pavilion.

"I'll be cultivating beside the pond. Call me if you need me," Lian Li said as he sat in front of the pond that was emitting powerful spiritual energy and began cultivating.

"You're really lucky to have such a beautiful woman as your partner." Xian Ni said to him in an envious tone.

"Thank you," Su Yang said with a smile on his face.

"Anyway, can you tell me more about your Immortal background? I'm actually very interested in an Immortal's lifestyle." Xian Ni said as he retrieved a teapot and three teacups. One for Su Yang, one for himself, and the final one for Xiao Rong, who was standing beside Su Yang like some kind of bodyguard.

"Two teacups is enough— she doesn't drink tea." Su Yang said.

Xian Ni nodded and took back one of the teacups.

"Xiao Rong, why don't you take a nap? We won't be going anywhere for the next three days," Su Yang said to her.

Xiao Rong nodded, and she transformed to her beast form before curling into a ball on Su Yang's lap, shocking Xian Ni.

"T-T-This is?! She was a magical beast this entire time?!" Xian Ni nearly dropped the teapot when he saw that.

"What? You've never seen a magical beast turn into a human before?" Su Yang asked him.

"I-I have... but they didn't look as perfect and you can tell right away that they are not truly human," Xian Ni said with a dazed look on his face.

"Is that so?" Su Yang said as he sipped on the tea that Xian Ni had just poured him.

A moment later, Su Yang spoke, "So you believe me when I say that I am an Immortal who experienced reincarnation?"

Xian Ni nodded and responded, "Even if I don't want to believe it, there's no other logical reason why someone so young would be so powerful."

Chapter 793 - Teleport Formation

After they settled down in this private pavilion, Su Yang proceeded to spend the next three days there speaking with Xian Ni, telling him about the Divine Heavens and Immortals, even giving him advice on cultivation, which greatly benefited Xian Ni by expanding his knowledge and overall standard for cultivation.

"I can't believe that there's such a vast world beyond this sky and nobody here is aware of here..." Xian Ni sighed as he stared at the blue sky blankly, looking like someone who was yearning for something.

"Do you... do you think it's possible for one to escape this world and travel to that cultivation world? This place... I feel like it's too small even though I have never left the Western Continent."

"And with the Jade Sea strictly restricting my movements, it feels as though only the Western Continent exists in this world."

Su Yang pondered, "There's nothing you nor I can do anything about the Jade Sea— at least not at our level. However, there are methods that can allow you to traverse to the other continents without needing to worry about the Jade Sea."

"Eh? Really? How can we do something like that?!" Xian Ni asked with his eyes flickering with excitement.

"Although it'll take a bit of effort and resources, one can create a teleport formation on all continents, and as long as you feed it enough spirit stones, you'll be able to teleport from one continent to another almost instantly," Su Yang said.

"T-That sounds... a bit impossible, doesn't it? First of all, we would need someone who can travel to all continents as well as create the teleport formations. And even if there exists someone who meets that criteria, how many years would it take for that individual to create these formations? I don't know much about formations but formations of that level must require decades if not centuries to create!"

"Additionally, I can already imagine the immense amount of wealth that is required to activate these formations."

Su Yang shrugged and said, "Well, I can create these formations on all continents in less than a month if you want. As for the spirit stones, although it'll be costly, one cannot expect to travel such a distance every day, as it's a luxury to use teleport formations even in the Divine Heavens."

"H-How much do you think it'll cost for each use?" Xian Ni asked him a moment later.

Su Yang pondered for a bit before raising 1 finger and said, "Probably around 1 million spirit stones for each use, maybe a little bit more if the place you're going to is further than the rest."

"One million spirit stones is definitely not a small number, but it's doable if we travel sparingly." Xian Ni said with a profound look on his face.

He then looked at Su Yang and asked, "If I asked you, would you be willing to create these formations? I don't mind paying for them as well."

Su Yang nodded and said, "I'd already planned on doing this before our conversation so you don't need to pay me. However, I cannot just create these formations without permission from these continents, so I'll ask the ruler of each continent to see whether they'll allow for these formations to exist in their

continent. If they don't want visitors from other continents, there's nothing I can really do about it since I don't want it to feel like an invasion."

"What do you think? Will your Xian Family allow me to create a teleport formation in the Western Continent, connecting to the other continents?" Su Yang asked Xian Ni.

Xian Ni immediately nodded and said, "Of course! This is going to be revolutionary! The five continents have been separated from each other since ancient times, and I can only imagine what might happen once we're allowed to visit each other for the first time! I am already excited for this even if only one other continent agrees with this!"

"Li'er, what do you think? Do you think your family will agree with this change?" Su Yang turned to ask her.

Lian Li nodded and said, "If you're the one asking, most likely."

'W-Wait a second... Her family governs the Holy Central Continent?' Xian Ni looked at Lian Li with wide eyes, as this is his first time hearing such a thing, and he'd thought that she was just some beauty from the Holy Central Continent!

"So we have the Western Continent, Holy Central Continent, and the Eastern Continent willing to have visitors, leaving only the Southern Continent and the Northern Continent." Su Yang mumbled.

"Hm? How do you know that the Eastern Continent will agree to this?" Xian Ni asked him. "Do you also have ties with the ruler there?"

Su Yang nodded and responded in a calm manner, "Yes, I i.m.p.r.e.g.n.a.t.ed their daughter so I am already a part of their family."

"You..." Xian Ni looked at Su Yang with dropped jaws, completely speechless by the casual way he'd said those shocking words.

"When will you be putting this plan in motion?" Xian Ni asked him sometime later.

"Probably sometime after I return to the Eastern Continent," Su Yang said. "But you can expect it to finish before the end of this year."

"That's very soon! I cannot wait for this!" Xian Ni clenched his hands into a fist that trembled from excitement. As someone who has lived for over a thousand years, waiting for another year wouldn't matter at all.

Su Yang nodded and said, "Anyway, it's about time for that tournament to start, right?"

"Yes, the tournament should be starting in a few hours. Shall we head there now? After all, we still have to register your name."

Sometime later, Su Yang and the group began making their way back to Immortal City.

"Wow, this place looks entirely different with so many people appearing out of the blue," Lian Li mumbled in a low voice after seeing millions of people trying to enter the city, and the city itself was crowded with people.

Chapter 794 - Let Me Fight All of Them

After entering the city, Xian Ni brought Su Yang and the others to this enormous and ancient-looking coliseum that was filled with loud noises and shouting.

"Hey, where do I register my friend here to the tournament?" Xian Ni approached one of the workers there.

"Huh?" The young man turned to look at Xian Ni's unique appearance with raised eyebrows, and then he sneered coldly, "I don't know who you are, old man, but the registration date for the tournament expired last week! We're no longer accepting any more participants no matter who you are or where you're from!"

"Hoh? Is that so?" Xian Ni remained calm despite the young man's lack of respect.

A moment later, he retrieved the Immortal Medallion and slammed it on the desk, nearly breaking it half.

"Are you sure you're not accepting any more participants? Why don't you double-check with your seniors, little boy?" Xian Ni said to the shocked young man who was shaking like he was experiencing an earthquake right beneath his feet.

"T-T-This is—! The Xian Family's Immortal Medallion?! W-Why do you have something like this! It must be fake!" The young man gritted his teeth a moment later and stood up angrily, "You damn old man! How dare you scare me like that! There's no way someone besides His Majesty can have the Immortal Medallion!"

"I'll freaking report you to the Xian Family to get you executed for impersonating royalty!" The young man pointed at Xian Ni with an enraged expression on his face.

Xian Ni shook his head and sighed, "This new generation is truly pathetic to not even recognize their ancestors..."

After taking a deep breath, Xian Ni spoke again, but it was in a loud voice that shook the entire place, "CANG SHICAI, GET YOUR ASS OUT HERE!"

The young man coughed up a mouthful of blood after feeling the immense pressure that nearly crushed his body, and he stared at Xian Ni with a terrified look on his face.

Everyone there also turned to look at them to see the commotion.

Not even a minute later, Cang Shicai could be seen flying towards them with a few individuals following behind him.

"What happened here, Ancestor Xian?!" Cang Shicai immediately bowed to Xian Ni after landing a few meters away from him.

Xian Ni pointed at the young man and said, "When a child cannot recognize their own ancestors, whose fault do you think it is? The child or the parents' fault?"

Cang Shicai immediately turned to look at the young man and frowned, "What did you do to upset Ancestor Xian? If my mind isn't playing tricks on me, there are plenty of pictures of Ancestor Xian in the Immortal Association's headquarters. To not recognize the Ancestor of the Xian Family, do you walk with your head down, or are you actually blind?"

"A-Ancestor Xian?!" The young man nearly fainted from shock after learning that he'd blatantly disrespected the ancestor of the Xian Family.

"Anyway, although we are a little late, I am here to register my friend for the tournament. You won't mind squeezing one more person into the list, right?" Xian Ni asked Cang Shicai.

Cang Shicai nodded his head with a nervous smile on his face despite already finalizing the roster and the fact that adding one more participant would mess up the entire thing.

"I don't mind accepting one more individual into the tournament as long as he qualifies to participate in it," he said a moment later.

And he continued, "Since he already has the Xian Family's recommendation, we only need to make sure that he's not older than 50 years old. Please follow me so that we can test his bone age."

Sometime later, they arrived at this room that had a familiar-looking object that resembled the Bone Age Totem during the Regional Tournament in the Eastern Continent.

"Please put your hands on this object and don't remove it until we tell you to do so." Cang Shicai said to Su Yang.

Su Yang placed his hands on the totem a moment later and patiently waited for the results.

A few seconds later, 18 silver lines appeared and spiraled around the totem.

"E-Eighteen years old? How is that possible?" Cang Shicai immediately doubted the results.

There was simply no way that someone so young could reach the peak of the Heavenly Spirit Realm that requires decades of experience and immense talent!

And if someone like him joins this tournament, it would no longer be a tournament but a one-sided slaughter!

"T-There must have been a mistake— let's try it again with this one..." Cang Shicai introduced another totem for him to test on, hoping it was really a mistake.

Su Yang didn't say anything and placed his hands on this new tester.

And to their surprise, the results came back the same.

"E-Eighteen years old... Are you really eighteen years old?" Cang Shicai looked at Su Yang with a dazed face.

"If you don't believe the results, we can repeat this until you're satisfied and convinced," Su Yang said to him in a calm voice.

"N-No... That won't be necessary," Cang Shicai quickly responded.

"However, since the roster is already finalized, we will have to delay the tournament for a couple more hours so that we can fit you inside."

Su Yang shook his head and said, "It's fine, you don't need to change anything."

"What do you mean by that?"

Everybody in the room looked at him with their eyebrows raised.

"Since I am a late entry and I don't want to spend too much time here, let me fight every participant in this tournament." Su Yang said, causing their jaws to drop.

"A-Are you sure about that? There are over ten thousand participants, and half of them are at the Earth Spirit Realm..." Cang Shicai said to him.

"Ten thousand or one hundred thousand— it won't make any difference." Su Yang said with an overbearing aura surrounding him, dumbfounding the people there.

Chapter 795 - A Total of 27 Immortal-grade Cultivation Techniques

"I-I understand. However, just like the Root of Revival, this is not a matter that I can decide alone." Cang Shicai said, and then he turned around to look at the nine figures behind him, "Fortunately for us today, the Nine Immortal Families are here."

And he continued, "What do you think, Seniors? Are you willing to accept this condition?"

Standing behind Cang Shicai were 9 old men with profound auras, and they were all high-ranking individuals within their respective families with enough authority to make such decisions without the head of their family.

However, before they could even open their mouths to speak, Su Yang said with a smile on his face, "If I cannot defeat every participant in this tournament by myself, I will give every family three Immortal-grade cultivation techniques, and they all will be different from each other. On the other hand, if I defeat everyone and win, I shall only take the Root of Revival. What do you think?"

The nine elders looked at each other with dumbfounded looks on their faces, as what Su Yang said sounded too good to be true.

If what Su Yang said is true, does this mean he'll be giving out a total of 27 Immortal-grade cultivation techniques? How can a single individual have so many of them when even the most influential families in this world have at most one or two Immortal-grade cultivation techniques.

"I can see the doubt in your eyes, but I'll personally reassure you that he'll keep his words," Xian Ni suddenly said, dumbfounding the elders even more.

"If not, the Xian Family will take full responsibility and give each of your family treasures worth around three Immortal-grade cultivation techniques."

After talking with each other in the background for a couple of minutes, the nine elders returned to their side and nodded with smiles on their faces.

"Very well! We'll accept this change! If this young man here can defeat every participant in this tournament by himself, we'll give him every reward on the list, let alone the Root of Revival. However, if he cannot, then he'll have to hand each family 3 unique Immortal-grade cultivation techniques."

Su Yang nodded and said, "Yes."

"Then we'll go ahead and prepare for this."

Cang Shicai and the nine elders then left the area to do their own things.

"What do you think? You may have the memories of an Immortal, but your real cultivation is only at the peak Heavenly Spirit Realm. Even if you have a tough body, it'll be difficult to fight so many experts at once." Xian Ni said to him.

"You don't think I'll be able to defeat them?" Su Yang looked at him with a mysterious smile.

"No, I trust that you'll be able to do it. I am just unsure how easily you'll be able to achieve this since I don't know your real abilities." Xian Ni said with a pondering look on his face.

Su Yang smiled and said, "Let's just say... If I'd used my cultivation during our spar, you wouldn't have stood a chance."

Xian Ni looked at him with wide eyes. A Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivator defeating someone in the Sovereign Spirit Realm? Unless he witnesses it with his own eyes, it was almost impossible for him to witness.

Of course, he'd been beaten by Su Yang already, but they weren't using their cultivation at that time.

Meanwhile, the nine elders from the Nine Immortal Families return to their own families to spread the news and changes regarding the tournament, shocking everybody there, especially the participants.

"What the heck?! We're going to have to fight someone at the peak Heavenly Spirit Realm?! That's impossible!" One of the participants who were only at the True Spirit Realm exclaimed.

"Don't worry, as long as even a single person defeats him, it'll be our victory, and we'll obtain three Immortal-grade cultivation techniques. This is not a battle of strength but a battle of endurance!"

"Hmmm... Three Immortal-grade cultivation techniques... This is indeed a tempting offer that's extremely hard to refuse. I understand why you agreed, elder..."

Even though the Patriarchs of these nine Immortal Families were skeptical and even slightly angry at first that their precious tournament was changed by a single individual, they also wanted these three Immortal-grade cultivation techniques.

"Since Ancestor Xian himself has given us reassurance, I guess we can trust this unknown individual."

Sometime later, all nine Patriarches from the nine Immortal Families appeared before the millions of spectators to announce the changes for the tournament.

"Thank you all for being patient. However, there have been changes to the tournament, and this will be an unprecedented event!"

"Instead of ten thousand participants fighting each other, these ten thousand participants will have to try and defeat a single individual who is at the peak Heavenly Spirit Realm!"

"Of course this peak Heavenly Spirit Realm Cultivator has met the requirements to participate in this tournament. However, it wouldn't be fun or fair if someone at that level enters this tournament, and this change was suggested by the individual himself!"

"Furthermore, this tournament has been blessed by Ancestor Xian himself!"

The audience was puzzled at first, then they were shocked by the changes, finally exploding with excitement when they heard the name 'Ancestor Xian'.

Sometime later, the Patriarchs said, "Now, let's give a grand welcoming to Ancestor Xian!"

The next moment, a dominating aura appeared in the place, and Xian Ni descended from the heavens like an Immortal and hovered in the middle of the coliseum with a grand presence.

When the audience noticed Xian Ni's presence, every individual there stood up and bowed to him. As for those that had enough room to kowtow, they went to their knees and kowtowed to him.

However, Xian Ni didn't even bother to introduce himself and said, "I am only here today to support my new friend who came from the Eastern Continent."

A few seconds later, a handsome young man with otherworldly features appeared and calmly walked onto the grand stage before standing in the middle with a confident smile on his face.

Chapter 796 - Frozen From Shock and Fear

"T-That's Ancestor Xian's 'friend'?"

When the audience looked up and saw Su Yang's handsome figure, the majority of them were left speechless.

Many of them wondered how someone so young could reach the peak Heavenly Spirit Realm while others wondered how the heavens could allow someone so handsome to exist in this world.

"If I didn't hear incorrectly, Ancestor Xian said he's from the Eastern Continent, right? How did he traverse the Jade Sea that even Sovereign Spirit Realm experts don't dare to challenge?"

"Who knows. Maybe the Eastern Continent has methods that allow them to achieve such a feat."

"If that was the case, why don't we have more visitors from the Eastern Continent? This is the first time I've seen someone from another continent."

While the audience mumbled to each other about Su Yang and the other continents, Su Yang took a deep breath before speaking in a calm voice that echoed in every direction.

"My name is Su Yang and I arrived at the Western Continent only a few days ago. As mentioned by the Nine Immortal Families, I will be challenging every participant in this tournament, and if I lose even a single fight, I shall be parting with three Immortal-grade cultivation techniques to each of the Nine Immortal Families."

Many people in the crowd gasped in shock when they heard Su Yang's words. Three Immortal-grade cultivation techniques for each family? That'd be 27 cultivation techniques if he loses even a single battle! Does he even have that many cultivation techniques in the first place, or is he simply making things up to force the Nine Immortal Families' hands and allow him to do this stunt?

Regardless, this is definitely an unprecedented event that might change the Western Continent as a whole!

A few moments after Su Yang gave his introduction, the Patriarchs from the Nine Immortal Families began explaining the rules.

"Although the tournament itself has changed significantly, the rules shall remain the same with a few additions."

"One, you must not kill your opponents. Accidents occur and there's nothing we can do about that in this eccentric world, but if there's even a hint that it was done on purpose, we will immediately disqualify you and punish you accordingly afterward."

"Two, you are not allowed to wield powerful spiritual treasures above the Spirit-grade."

"Three, if your opponent surrenders, you are to immediately halt your movements and stop attacking your opponent."

"Four, you are not allowed to consume pills or use any treasures that will enhance your strength or capabilities in any manner."

"Five, if you step outside the stage, you will automatically surrender the fight."

"Six, participant Su Yang will be allowed fifteen minutes of rest after every 100 fights to recover his spiritual energy."

Once the Patriarchs were finished with the rules, one of them turned to look at Su Yang and asked him, "Are you ready to begin?"

Su Yang nodded and said, "Whenever you're all ready."

"Then we'll bring in the first participant."

A few moments later, a young man at the third level True Spirit Realm approached the stage with unstable movements, clearly anxious about the situation.

Su Yang raised his eyebrows when he saw this timid-looking Cultivator approaching him, and he said, "You know... While I have plenty of time to spend, I am not someone who likes to drag things around, therefore, I will give you a chance to surrender."

The participant swallowed his nervousness before laughing out loud, "You think I don't know what you're trying to do? I don't care where you're from, but how dare you mess with the traditions of this tournament! Even if I won't be able to defeat you, I'll at least chip away some of your spiritual energy! You may be able to defeat a hundred— even a thousand of us, but I don't believe you'll be able to defeat all of us!"

"Is that so?" Su Yang mumbled in a nonchalant voice.

Once the young participant stood on the stage, Su Yang closed his eyes and took a deep breath.

A moment later, he opened his eyes, which flashed with a profound flicker.

BOOM!

An immense and sharp aura suddenly exploded from Su Yang's body, causing the atmosphere there to change.

"T-This is! Sword Intent?!" Xian Ni narrowed his eyes trying to analyze Su Yang's Sword Qi.

As for the other people there, they were shocked speechless by the majestic and cold aura around Su Yang, feeling like there was an invisible blade placed directly before their necks despite being so far away from him.

Meanwhile, the young man standing only a couple of meters away from Su Yang had directly fallen unconscious the moment Su Yang's Sword Qi even got close to him.

However, Su Yang did not retrieve his Sword Qi even when the participant was clearly incapable of continuing the match, and he spoke in a loud but smooth voice, "If you really think this is a battle of endurance, then allow me to open your narrow eyes a bit..."

BOOM!

Su Yang's aura became even more tyrannical when he released his Sword Will that was combined with his peak Heavenly Spirit Realm cultivation, causing the sky to darken and the atmosphere to tremble, almost like he was trying to flip the world with his aura.

After a moment of deep silence, Su Yang spoke again, "While I won't purposefully kill anyone, I also cannot promise you that I won't accidentally kill someone since there are so many of you and it's hard for me to hold back when I am serious, and I am seriously trying to obtain the Root of Revival. Anyone who dares to try and prevent me from doing so will be eliminated in the swiftest way possible!"

Su Yang's domineering voice echoed in the coliseum, and every participant there stared at his handsome figure with wide eyes filled with shock, and Su Yang's figure suddenly began growing larger and larger in these participants' eyes, indicating how much of a threat Su Yang looked in their eyes right now.

'This young man...'

The Patriarchs of the Nine Immortal Families narrowed their eyes at Su Yang, their bodies frozen from shock and fear before Su Yang's invincible presence.

Chapter 797 - Banned From Participating

'This guy, Su Yang! He was not joking when he said I won't stand a chance against him!' Xian Ni stared at Su Yang's domineering figure and tyrannical aura with a gawking look on his face.

How can someone at the Heavenly Spirit Realm emit such a powerful aura when even Sovereign Spirit Realm Cultivators could not? Is this the difference between a real Immortal and a fake Immortal? Just how deep does Su Yang's strength go?

"You can send in the next participant," Su Yang suddenly said.

A few moments of silence later, one of the experts there went onto the stage and carried the unconscious young man off the stage.

"Please give us a moment to bring in the next participant." The expert said to Su Yang before leaving the stage.

"Who is next?! Quickly get on the stage!" One of the elders from the Nine Immortal Families said to the participants that were holed up somewhere inside the colosseum.

"Are you crazy?! You want us to fight that monster?! There's no way that's possible! Not even my father could defeat that man!" One of the participants suddenly said.

The other participants followed and began complaining.

"That's right! I don't want to die!"

"Did you see his aura?! That's not something you can fight! Forget about tiring him out! His aura will exhaust us before we can even step onto the stage! This is impossible!"

"ENOUGH!"

Someone suddenly roared, instantly silencing the place.

The people there turned to look in the direction of the voice to see nine figures standing side by side not far in the distance.

"The Nine Immortal Families Patriarchs!"

The participants immediately recognized their faces.

"I don't want to hear any more complaints! So what if he has an impressive aura? So what if you cannot defeat him? Don't forget your status and where you came from! Don't forget the Xian Family is watching all of us! Don't forget that Ancestor Xian is also here!"

"I don't care if you're scared! You WILL stand on the stage and fight him!"

"If you surrender or refuse to fight him, your sect or family will be banned from participating in the next 3 tournaments!"

The participants there stared at these nine Patriarchs with shocked expressions on their faces.

They'll be banned from participating in the tournament? That's ridiculous and overbearing as hell!

However, as much as they wanted to complain, these participants didn't dare to offend or oppose the heads of the Nine Immortal Families, so they can only nod their heads in silence.

Seeing the participants nod, the Patriarchs said, "Good! Then whoever is next in line, get out there and fight him!"

Sometime later, another young man approached the stage. However, his aura was nonexistent compared to Su Yang's aura, and there was not even the slightest of confidence that could be felt coming from this young man.

Once the new challenger stepped onto the stage, his legs began shaking even more uncontrollably, almost they were made of tofu.

"Since you dared to stand before me, I will assume that you've accepted the risk." Su Yang said to the young man with a calm look on his face.

"Y-Y-Y-You can't scare me!" The young man stuttered before taking out a spirit-grade spiritual treasure.

"Hmph!"

Su Yang coldly snorted, sending some of his Sword Intent at the young man.

WHOOSH!

A split second later, the Sword Intent slammed into the young man like an invisible wall before sending him flying out of the stage and into the audience, shocking everybody there.

"Next!" Su Yang did not even bother to look at the young man and shouted for the next opponent.

A few seconds later, another challenger stepped onto the stage.

However, this time, without waiting for the challenger to even fully stand on the stage, Su Yang attacked the challenger the second his foot touched the stage, sending him flying into the audience again.

"Next!"

Su Yang shouted in a domineering voice, his tyrannical aura growing stronger by the second.

A moment later, another participant was sent flying into the stage, his injuries worse than the previous two victims.

The Patriarchs frowned when they saw this.

"Is he slowly injuring his enemies more and more as a warning? Until one of them finally dies?" One of them couldn't help but ask out loud.

"This lad... how bold..."

A dozen unconscious challengers later, the first female fighter appeared on the stage, and to everyone's surprise, Su Yang didn't immediately send her flying into the audience like the previous participants.

'I am safe...?'

The female fighter, who'd expected and prepared to be blown away the second she stepped onto the stage was pleasantly surprised that she'd managed to stand on the stage with both her legs!

However, before she could even open her mouth to speak, Su Yang said to her in a calm voice, "You have exactly three seconds to turn around and leave the stage before I strip you n.a.k.e.d before everyone here."

The female fighter's jaw dropped to the ground after hearing Su Yang's words. And seeing the seriousness in Su Yang's eyes, this female fighter unconsciously took a step back.

However, she recalled the Patriarchs' warning and gritted her teeth.

"Screw you!"

The female fighter suddenly rushed at Su Yang, but alas, before she could even take two steps, Su Yang released a torrent of Sword Qi at her, tearing her clothes to shreds.

"Aaahhhhh!"

Realizing that she was practically n.a.k.e.d, the female fighter immediately crouched down and blocked her chest with her arms.

"H-How dare you! Do you have any shame?! Are you even a man?!" she shouted at him with a fuming expression.

However, Su Yang remained nonchalant and said, "You have another three seconds to get off the stage before I sent you flying into the audience... unconscious."

The female fighter's eyes widened with shock, and she immediately shouted, "I-I give up! I surrender! Please, don't send me flying into the audience!"

The entire place turned dead silent afterward, and everyone there stared at Su Yang with disbelief in their eyes.

Chapter 798 - 24 Hours

One of the elders there appeared on the stage and wrapped some clothes around the female fighter a few seconds after she surrendered the match.

"How can you embarrass a young lady before so many people in public?" The elder shook his head at Su Yang.

However, Su Yang remained nonchalant and said, "You can't say that I hadn't warned her. Anyway, I am getting bored. Why don't you send more than one participant onto the stage at a time? That will make things more fun and save us more time."

He then looked around the empty stage and said, "You can send in 50 participants at a time."

"F-Fifty fighters at a time?!" The elder exclaimed in a shocked voice.

"A-Are you sure?"

Su Yang nodded and said, "Yes, go ahead and send in 50 at a time."

"Let me speak with the Patriarchs first."

The elder said before leaving the stage and approaching the Patriarchs that were spectating them from their own area.

"What? He wants to fight 50 people at once?"

"Is he trying to save energy this way?"

"Even if that's his intention, I also don't feel like watching the same thing repeating over and over again for ten thousand times."

"I just want this to be over with... I am feeling uncomfortable just from being near his aura..."

"Hmmm..."

"Very well, then we shall let him fight fifty people at once. Perhaps one of them might even catch him off guard and secure us the victory."

A few moments after the nine Patriarchs came to an agreement, they announced their decision and the tournament's changes to the audience.

"Su Yang from the Eastern Continent has suggested that we send in fifty fighters at once, and after some considerations, we have decided to agree! Therefore, starting this point, it will be one versus fifty!"

The crowd erupted with excitement after hearing this.

"One against fifty in a tournament?! I have never heard of this before, much less witness it!"

"Do you think this Su Yang is biting more than he can chew? He may be powerful, but fighting 50 Cultivators at once is simply too much! He will definitely exhaust his energy faster by doing this!"

"Who cares! At least I don't have to sit through 10 thousand boring matches now!"

Sometime later, fifty fighters appeared on the stage and surrounded Su Yang.

Although they feared fighting Su Yang by themselves, since they were no longer alone, these fighters felt more comfortable and confident in facing Su Yang, allowing them to stand on the stage without shaking.

"You've dug yourself a hole by wanting to fight 50 of us at once!"

"If you think you can just send all of us flying at once to save spiritual energy, you're dead wrong!"

The next moment, all fifty participants released their cultivation bases and created a thin barrier made of pure spiritual energy around their own bodies.

Su Yang smiled when he saw this, and he asked them, "If you think surrounding yourselves with spiritual energy will help you block my Spirit Qi..."

Su Yang's gaze suddenly flashed with a violent flicker, and his Spirit Qi exploded outwards a split second later, assaulting all fifty fighters at once.

"What?!"

The fighters cried out loud when Su Yang's Sword Qi engulfed their bodies like flames. However, instead of burning their bodies, the Sword Qi tore their spiritual energy shield and clothes to shreds, even giving them bloody cuts all over their bodies.

"Aaaaaah!"

Painful screams echoed in the colosseum, sending chills down the spectators' spine.

A few seconds later, Su Yang retrieved his Sword Qi, and all fifty fighters collapsed with blood oozing from their bodies.

Su Yang then turned to look at the nine Patriarchs before speaking in a calm voice, "Don't worry, they're not dead. Hurry up and clean them up and send in the next fifty fighters."

The Patriarchs were left speechless after hearing Su Yang's overbearing words. Does he intend on coloring the entire arena with his opponents' blood?

A few moments later, a couple of workers went onto the stage to carry the unconscious and n.a.k.e.d fighters off the stage.

Once another fifty fighters appeared on the stage, Su Yang repeated the same thing and instantly knocked out all of the fighters with his Sword Qi.

"T-This is ridiculous!"

One of the Patriarchs stood up from his seat and exclaimed.

"Send in the next fifty fighters! I don't believe he can continue doing this! There must be a limit to how many times he can use that technique!" The Patriarch said, thinking that Su Yang was using some sort of powerful technique.

A few moments later, fifty more fighters appeared on the stage, but the expressions on their faces looked a bit weird, even fearful.

'Damn it! Why do we have to suffer like this?! Just so the Nine Immortal Families can obtain the Immortal-grade cultivation techniques?! What do we get?! This isn't fair!'

The fighters on the stage cried inwardly, silently cursing the Nine Immortal Families.

However, to these fighters' surprise, Su Yang did not immediately defeat them.

"I have another proposal," Su Yang suddenly said to the Patriarchs.

"What is it this time?" They frowned.

"Instead of sending fifty at a time, you can allow anyone who wishes to fight me to enter the stage and fight me whenever they want. I don't care if a hundred, a thousand, or even all of them attack me at once. I'll allow it. However, you will only have 24 hours to defeat me. If nobody defeats me in 24 hours, it'll be considered my victory."

The nine Patriarchs looked at each other with raised eyebrows.

"While his suggestion looks very advantageous for us at glance, why is he giving us 24 hours? That's a very long time."

"Right? If everyone attacks him at once, it could be over in just a few minutes. Why must he cripple himself by giving us so much time?"

"I don't know, but it is very suspicious."

While the Patriarchs pondered, Su Yang said with a smile on his face, "Don't worry, I don't have any ulterior motives. The rules will remain the same. If 24 hours is too generous, let's shorten it to one hour!"

Chapter 799 - A Few Minutes to Prepare

A few minutes have passed since Su Yang gave the Patriarchs another suggestion, yet they haven't come to a conclusion yet.

"I have a very bad feeling about this, and I cannot shake this ominous feeling no matter how much I try..."

"First he suggests 24 hours, then he suggests 1 hour... The difference is too vast. What on earth is he thinking?"

"I have no idea, but does it really matter? All remaining participants will have 24 hours to defeat him. Whatever he does, it won't change that fact!"

After speaking to each other for a couple more minutes, they returned their attention to Su Yang, and they said to him.

"Very well. As long as the rules remain the same, we will agree with your methods. Since the tournament is already beyond normal, it won't make any difference if we change things around."

Su Yang nodded and then asked, "Can I get a few minutes to prepare myself?"

"Go ahead! Try not to take too long, though!"

"It will only be a few minutes," Su Yang said with a mysterious smile on his face that gave an ominous feeling to the Patriarchs.

After turning around, Su Yang suddenly lifted his arm into the air with his index finger glowing a small but bright golden light, creating a beautiful line in the air wherever his fingers moved.

He continued to move his fingers through the air, almost like he was using it as a brush and writing something in the air.

A few seconds later, a majestic symbol that emitted a profound aura floated in the air, shocking the audience and the nine Immortal Families' Patriarchs.

"T-That... Is that what I think it is?!" One of them exclaimed.

"W-What the heck? That looks like array symbols no matter how I look at it."

"That is array symbols! Why is he creating them? Does he intend on making a formation now?"

"Hahaha! I can't believe it! Does he really plan on making a formation in just a few minutes?!"

"Even the best Array Masters in the Western Continent require many weeks just to set up the most basic formation! Even if the Eastern Continent is more advanced in arrays, I highly doubt the difference is this vast, where they can do it in mere minutes!"

Xian Ni stared at the majestic symbols floating in the air with his jaw dropped, as he had never seen such clean and flawless symbols before.

While he is not an Array Master, he has dabbled in formations for a few years, so he has some knowledge in that aspect— enough to tell what Su Yang had done just now was incredibly ridiculous.

'He'd created such a flawless and powerful symbol in just a few seconds! That's impossible! It would take even the best Array Masters in this place an entire week to draw one of those and it would still not come out with such perfection!' Xian Ni cried inwardly, feeling a little numb from the shock.

Meanwhile, the nine Patriarchs that was unaware of Su Yang's brilliance laughed at his foolishness.

"Even if he can create a formation within just a few minutes, there's no way such a rushed formation would have any effect!"

"Such a fragile formation will collapse with just the wind blowing on it!"

A few minutes later, over a hundred golden symbols floated around Su Yang, emitting an otherworldly aura.

"Form!"

Su Yang suddenly poked one of these symbols, and all one hundred symbols began trembling before connecting with each other, forming a translucent box around Su Yang.

Once the formation was finished, Su Yang turned to look at the Patriarchs and said, "Okay, I am prepared. The rules never mentioned anything about formations so I'll assume it's allowed. There shouldn't be any problems, right?"

"Yes, you're right. There is no such rule that forbids the usage of formations, mostly because we never imagined that someone would have enough time to create a formation in the middle of a tournament." One of the Patriarchs said to him.

Su Yang nodded, and then he turned to look at the participants and said to them, "You now all have 24 hours to break this formation..."

Su Yang suddenly paused in the middle of his sentence.

A few seconds later, he continued, "Actually, let's do this instead. If even a single one of you can create a crack in this formation— no matter how small— I will personally forfeit this tournament and not only give the Nine Immortal Families their Immortal-grade cultivation techniques but also one million spirit stones to every participant in this tournament!"

"WHAT?!"

Everybody there exclaimed in a shocked voice, and they all stared at Su Yang with gawking looks on their faces.

If someone manages to break the formation, Su Yang would have to shell out an astronomical amount of wealth, and since there are about ten thousand participants, it would mean over ten billion spirit stones!

Is it even possible for a single man to have such wealth in this world?

"There's no way you have that much money! Your words are merely empty promises!" One of the participants there pointed at him and shouted.

Su Yang then looked at that participant and said, "You should worry about whether you can break the formation or not before you start worrying about the money."

The young man coldly snorted in disdain and said, "Then watch me break this formation effortlessly! There's no way you can create a powerful formation in such a short time!"

After his sentence ended, the young man pounced at Su Yang and slashed the formation with his Spirit-grade sword.

"Break for me!"

The young man shouted, expecting the formation to crumble the moment his sword touches it.

However, to his surprise, the formation not only didn't collapse, it even deflected his sword, sending it flying out of his hand and landing somewhere in the audience, almost hitting someone with it.

Luckily for that individual who almost got it, Xian Ni caught the sword with his spiritual energy before it caused an accident.

"What?! That's impossible!" The young man stared at Su Yang's perfectly healthy formation with a shocked look on his face.

Chapter 800 - Are You Trying to Scare Us to Death?!

"Let me try! Raging Fists!"

Another participant there suddenly rushed at Su Yang before throwing a powerful punch at the formation.

Boom!

The moment the fighter's fist touched the formation, almost as though he'd punched himself, he was sent flying into the audience.

Meanwhile, the spectators mumbled to each other in a dazed voice.

"Heavens... I have never seen someone create such a sturdy formation in just a few minutes..."

"Just who is this man? He can not only use Sword Intent but he can also create formations..."

"Although it may be pretty powerful, I highly doubt it would be able to withstand continuous attacks for the next 24 hours."

"Anybody else wants to try? You have 24 hours to crack this formation. Until then..." Su Yang suddenly sat down in the lotus position and closed his eyes, beginning to cultivate.

"T-This bastard! He's underestimating us!"

"I don't believe that we cannot break his formation!"

"Everybody! Get him!"

Very quickly, hundreds of participants began throwing their long-ranged techniques at the formation, as they learned from the previous two victims that the formation had some sort of rebounding property to it, making physical contact very dangerous.

Boom! Boom! Boom!

Many explosions occurred as hundreds of techniques combined and attacked the formation, causing the stage to tremble slightly.

"That must've at least cracked the formation!"

"There's no way the formation is unharmed after all that!"

The spectators yelled in excitement, and the nine Patriarches tightly grasped their fists in anticipation.

A few moments later, once all of the smoke and dust disappeared, a perfectly intact and beautiful formation surrounded Su Yang without a single scratch on it.

"WHAT?! There's not even a scratch on that formation! How is that possible!"

The Patriarchs were bewildered by the results. Just how durable is this formation? And how did Su Yang create something this powerful in just a few minutes?

"A-Again! Let's do it again! We got all day!"

The fighters on the stage immediately launched another attack at Su Yang with even more people participating this time, but alas, the formation remained untouched.

However, these fighters were reluctant to give up and continued attacking Su Yang with their cultivation techniques.

As time passed, even more people joined the fray to attack the formation, mostly because they feared that Su Yang might suddenly attack them from inside the barrier at the beginning. Once they were convinced and confident that Su Yang would not suddenly attack them did they finally decide to join the fun.

However, the arena could only fit so many people, so the people formed groups and took turns attacking the formation while the other groups went to recover their spiritual energy.

Four hours later, the fighters stopped attacking for a brief moment to see the results of their hard work.

"T-This is f.u.c.k.i.n.g ridiculous! There's not even a scratch on that thing!"

"How is that even possible?!"

"Shit! We've been going at it for hours! I refuse to believe that it's really that sturdy! There must be some sort of secret behind his formation!"

"Let's stop attacking for a second and try to analyze it instead!" One of the fighters suddenly suggested.

However, there was a huge hole within that logic.

"Who's going to do it?" Another individual suddenly asked.

"Preferably someone who has some experience in formations. After all, it would make no sense to ask a swordmaster about bows."

"Who here knows a thing or two about formations?! Come up here!"

A few minutes later, a dozen people stood beside Su Yang's formation.

"He's not going to attack us while we analyze the formation, right?" One of them asked in a nervous voice.

"D-Don't say something like that!"

"Anyway, let's begin analyzing the formation."

Thus, these people began using their spiritual sense to analyze the formation.

When the audience noticed what they were trying to do, the entire place turned dead silent, as they wanted these participants to focus. After all, even though they were not participating in this tournament themselves, it still felt like they were a part of this tournament as someone from the Western Continent, and they were all going against Su Yang who was from the Eastern Continent.

However, many minutes later, once the place became comfortable with the silent atmosphere and the participants focusing on the formation were absorbed in their examination, Su Yang suddenly opened his eyes and released his tyrannical aura, even shouting out loud.

"AH!"

This sudden reaction from Su Yang immediately scared the crap out of every person there, causing their hearts to skip a beat and almost jump out of their chests, especially the participants that were absorbed in his formation that had literally pissed and shat their pants from shock and fear before collapsing on the stage with foam coming out of their mouth a second later.

"Motherf.u.c.k.er! Are you trying to scare us to death?! What is the purpose of your actions just now?!" The Patriarchs stood up from their seats and began cursing at Su Yang because they had also been affected by Su Yang's little joke.

"Eh? I was on the verge of a breakthrough, but I guess it was my mistake. I'm sorry if it'd startled any of you," Su Yang said to them in a non-apologetic voice.

"Startled?! By startled do you mean a f.u.c.k.i.n.g heart attack?! Because I can still feel my heart beating crazily!"

Su Yang shook his head and said, "It wasn't intentional. However, if you're not satisfied with my apology, I'll let all nine of you join this tournament and attempt to break this formation. What do you think?"

"W-What did you just say? That you'll let us attack the formation?" The Patriarchs and everybody in the audience looked at Su Yang with disbelief in their eyes.

Su Yang nodded and confirmed, "That's right. The rules will even remain the same. If you can create even a single crack in this formation within the time limit, I'll consider it your win. If you can't, it'll be my win."